

HISTORY
of
POPE, CARTER AND MCFERRIN
FAMILIES

Gc
929.2
P806p
1508143

M. L.

F

1750

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01419 4721



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2019

<https://archive.org/details/historiesofpopec00pope>

HISTORIES OF THE POPE, CARTER^c
AND McFERRIN FAMILIES OF
MIDDLE TENNESSEE



BY

WILLIAM RIVERS POPE
COLONEL, U. S. ARMY, RETIRED

1950

McQUIDDY PRINTING COMPANY
NASHVILLE, TENNESSEE

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

1508143

FOREWORD

No attempt has been made to attain literary merit in this book.

A considerable portion is a compilation with the authorities given in each instance as far as possible. This information has been obtained from:

1. The Newberry Library, Chicago, Illinois, 1930-31.
2. The Congressional Library, Washington, D. C., 1947-48.
3. The DAR Library, Washington, D. C., 1947-48.
4. The Virginia State Library, Richmond, Virginia, 1949-50.
5. The Virginia Historical Library, Richmond, Virginia, 1949-50.

All of these have been very courteous and cooperative and I express my sincere appreciation to them.

In some cases, as on page 168 in the account of the probate of the will of Robert³ Ruffin, two dates are given. This apparent conflict is the result of the use at that time of both the Gregorian and Julian calendars.

KEY

3V200: Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. 3, p. 200.

1W(1)100: William and Mary Magazine, Ser. 1, Vol. 1, p. 100.

10W(2)300: William and Mary Magazine, Ser. 2, Vol. 10, p. 300.

2T10: Tyler's Quarterly Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Vol. 2, p. 10.

11H50: Henning's Statutes at Large, Vol. 11, p. 50.

12C100: Calendar of Virginia State Papers, Vol. 12, p. 100.

1R200: Virginia Historical Register, Vol. 1, p. 200.

5N250: Lower Norfolk County, Virginia, Antiquary, Vol. 5, p. 250.

1C100: Virginia County Records, Vol. 1, p. 100.

CRNC 5/100: Colonial and State Papers, North Carolina, Vol. 5, p. 100.

SHAP 6/200: Southern Historical Association Publications, Vol. 6, p. 200.

NCH&GR 3/100: North Carolina Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. 3, p. 100.

SCH&GM 3/300: South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine, Vol. 3, p. 300.

17C&IofW, 400: Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, p. 400.

IofW, 200: Isle of Wight County, Virginia, p. 200.

Other authorities quoted are generally fully written out.

In one of the books examined, I found a quotation which is reproduced here:

“It has been observed by Sir Thomas Overbury, that ‘the man who has only the excellence of his ancestry to boast of, resembles that edible root, the potato, the best part being underground.’ ”

POPE AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ALLIED FAMILIES: ENGLISH, EXUM, GANT, JEFFRIES, LAWRENCE, LENOIR, LUCAS, McKINNE, NORWOOD, RICKS, WALL, WATTS, WASHINGTON.

POPE FAMILY

Media Research Bureau, Washington, D. C., 1937: The name of POPE is said to have been of Latin origin and to have originally meant "father." It is thought probable that the name was taken into England about the time of the Roman occupation of Britain, in the year 465 A.D., or before. Certainly there was a Saxon town called POPEHAM (home of POPE) prior to the time of the Norman invasion of England in 1066, and it is thought probable that this town received its name from a man named POPE at an early date.

Families of the name of POPE were early situated in the counties of Oxford, Sussex, Kent, Devon, Dorset, York, Herts, Salop, Suffolk, Cornwall and Northampton, as well as in the city of London.

Of the Oxfordshire line of the family, one Thomas Pope was living in the year 1287 and is believed to have been the ancestor of John Pope who was married in the early part of the fifteenth century to Grace Simpson, by whom he had issue of William, who was the father of John and Thomas, of whom the first was the father of a son named William, who was created first Earl of Down and Baron of Beltirbet, Ireland. This William was the father of Thomas and William, of whom the second had a son named Thomas, who succeeded to the family estates after the death of his uncle without male issue, but left only female heirs himself.

Of the Suffolk branch of the family, one Ralph Pope was living at the beginning of the fourteenth century and was the father of at least one son, Sir William Pope, and probably had others, including the John Pope who was living in Suffolk in 1367.

It is not definitely known from which of the many branches of the family in England the early American emigrants of the name were descended, but all of the POPES are believed to have been of common origin at a remote period.

The descendants of these various branches of the family in America have spread to practically every State of the

Union and have aided as much in the growth of the country as their ancestors aided in the founding of the nation.

They have been noted for their courage, energy, ambition, piety, industry, resourcefulness, perseverance, fortitude and leadership.

Waters Genealogical Gleanings in England, Vol. 1, page 487, and New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. 45, page 62: The Coat of Arms granted Sir Thomas Pope, Guardian and custodian of Elizabeth, afterwards Queen Elizabeth, had the motto: "Mihi, Tibi," (meaning justice) "To me and to you." The Arms are: Two chevrons gule, a canton azure. Crest: A cubit arm erect, habited gules, cuffed argent, holding in the hand proper a pair of scales or, Motto: "Mihi, Tibi."

The fact that this coat of arms is the same as ours obviously indicated a connection between these branches but the lapse of a century makes it difficult to establish.

One of the Privy Council of Henry VI was Thomas Pope—the guardian of the Princess Elizabeth, afterwards Queen Elizabeth, during her minority was Sir Thomas Pope. He resided with her at Hatfield House, and was there authorized by her to decline the King of Sweden's offer of marriage. Sir Thomas is better remembered for his endowment of Trinity College, where he is buried. We may take it that he was a wise man, if the legend engraved upon his tombstone was his life motto: "Whatever you wish untold to no man tell."

Robert Pargiter of Grylworth, in county of Northampton (England) Will, 4th February, 1557; proved 31st January, 1558: My son and Ann my wife shall have my farm in Shattiswell in the county of Worcester, which I hold by indenture of Sire Thomas Pope, Knight.

Item: I ordain and make Lawrence Washington, my son-in-law to be the Supervisor of this my last Will and Testament and he is to have for his labor and paines taken therein 40 shillings.

A century later we find the Pope and Washington families transplanted in Virginia, having the same family names, socially intimate and intermarrying.

Pope Family, 1634-1800, page 279: The traditions of the origin of the Pope families in the South (Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and westwards) all point back to the James River Valley, Virginia, as the starting point of their history in America.

11W(1)170: "The Popes, like many of the leading families of east Virginia, were London people of the mercantile class."

15W(1)175: "These men were merchants, representatives of old English families . . . each having under his control a squad of white servants."

Pope Family, 1634-1800, page 278: "The Pope Family of the 'Old Dominion' were somewhat earlier than those in New England."

List of Emigrants to America, 1600-1700, pages 192, 193, Part 1: A Thomas Pope was living in Martin's Hundred, Virginia, in 1622. Dead "since April last," 16 February, 1623.

List of Emigrants to America, 1600-1700, Part 1, page 124: One JO (John ?) Pope, age, 28, came over from England in the "GEORGE," sailing August 21, 1635, and ANTO (Anthony ?) POPE sailed in the "FALCON," on December 25, 1635, both for Virginia.

List of Emigrants to America, 1600-1700, Part 1, page 177, and Pope Family, 1634-1800, page 279: A George Pope was living in James Island, Virginia, on February 16, 1623. "It is also possible that GEORGE POPE who lived in 'Jamisland' February 16, 1623, was the progenitor of the family at Pope's Creek, Westmoreland County, Virginia, and was ancestor of George Washington." (John Washington married Anne Pope, daughter of Nathaniel Pope, living in Virginia in 1675. Their son, Lawrence Washington, was the father of Augustine Washington and he the father of George Washington.)

The parentage of most of the early emigrants to America is in considerable doubt. Some authorities (R. A. Brock) state that "it is probable" that Nathaniel Pope, who was born circa 1615, probably in London or in Bristol, England, emigrated to Maryland in 1635 and removed to Virginia in

1640, settling in Westmoreland County (Colonial Families of America, Vol. 7, page 277), and William Pope of Westmoreland and Nansemond Counties were brothers (Waters Genealogical Gleanings, Vol. 1, page 403). As the latter was born in 1634, this assumption may be correct, although there would be a difference of about eighteen years in their ages. The fact that both were from Westmoreland County further substantiates this assumption.

21V145-7: "The Coroner's Enquest Impaneled upon the death of George Pope and Infant Child December xxxjth, 1624." Child drowned in a well while getting water. Parents came over in "london marchant aboute (two) yeeres and a half past ye child then being as his parents said aboute two yeeres olde." George Pope, infant son of George Pope and his wife, "both livinge in ye Corporation of James Cyttie wth other children." (Is it probable that some of the "other children" were Nathaniel and William and that they went up to Westmoreland County?)

W & M GLY., Vol. 7, page 212: "William Pope was probably the brother of Nathaniel Pope (whose daughter, Anne, married John Washington, the great-grandfather of George Washington). He certainly patented lands in Nansemond County in 1656, 1662 and 1665 and, according to Mr. Brock, in Westmoreland County (Land Grant Bk. 4, page 31, is the reference given by Mr. R. A. Brock, a recognized genealogist, for the grant of 200 acres in Westmoreland County to William Pope March 11, 1655). He (William Pope), as was the intention of Nathaniel Pope, revisited England in the 1690's and died in Nansemond County soon after returning home (he died in 1700). Reference to his visit and death appears in the Nansemond County Records. One who gave me this information personally examined the records but did not give me the book and page where found. William Pope is mentioned among the friends at Nansemond authorized by George Fox to establish regularly Quarterly Meetings there in 1673 (Quaker Records in manuscript in safety deposit box at Baltimore). After carefully examining these early records, I am persuaded that Nathaniel and William Pope were from

the same English Stirp, and that William, Richard, John and Thomas Pope were brothers, and probably the sons of Richard Pope, Sr., merchant and soap maker, of Bristol in 1662. Of course, this is a conjecture; no records discovered actually connect them. Among the descendants of Nathaniel and William we find in almost every generation and in every branch of their families the names of William, Henry, Thomas, Richard and John.

As William Pope was a Quaker, somewhat of his family record has been preserved by them. Many of the leading men, Col. Joseph Bridger, Maj. Thomas Taberer, Gen. Richard Bennett, Col. Thomas Bushrod, Col. Thomas Godwin, et al., sympathized with the Quakers, when they did not absolutely belong to them; and while the Quakers were sometimes fined for non-conformity, and for failure to notify the authorities of their intended meetings and assemblies, they had their own meetinghouses and practically their own way."

Pope Family, 1634-1800, page 279: It is not known which Pope was the founder of this family in Virginia, but indications strongly point to George Pope who was (probably) the father of Nathaniel and William Pope.

24W(1)45 and 27W(1)58-64: The first Pope, in a direct and proved line, of whom I have a record was William¹ Pope, born in 1634 and died in 1700 who lived in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. His wife was Marie, whom he married in 1660. He received a grant of land in Westmoreland County in 1655, in Nansemond County in 1656 and 1662 and in Isle of Wight County in 1665. William Pope was a Quaker and a brother of Nathaniel Pope of Westmoreland County, whose daughter, Anne, was the great-grandmother of George Washington.

Richmond Land Grant Book, 4, page 31: William Pope granted 200 acres in Westmoreland County, Virginia, March 11, 1655.

Isle of Wight Great Book, 4, page 89: On October 8, 1656, William Pope received a grant of 190 acres in Nansemond County for the transportation of four persons.

Richmond Land Grant Book, 4, page 406: Governor Francis Moryson, Esq., grants William Pope 200 acres of land in Nansemond County, A.D. 1662.

Isle of Wight Great Book, 5, page 114: On July 25, 1665, patent granted to William Pope for 950 acres of land in Isle of Wight County, near Indian Swamp.

27W(1)61 and SHAP 6/508: William¹ Pope and Marie, his wife, had the following children:

a. William,² born August 16, 1662; died May 28, 1728. Married Mary Haile, at Chuckatuck, Nansemond County, Virginia, on February 11, 1708. Two of the witnesses to his marriage were Henry² Pope and his wife Sarah (SHAP 6/413, 508). In 1704 William owned 890 acres of land in Nansemond County (29V342, 406 and 34V351) and 90 acres in Isle of Wight County in 1715 (10V276).

SHAP 6/413: Early Quaker Records in Virginia: "Wm. Pope of the County of Nansemond and Mary Haile of the County aforesd did Publish their marriage In our Publick meeting house Before a meeting of men and women friends upon the first mo 1707 and Coming Before the meeting the second time att our aforsd Publick meeting house in Chuchatuck upon the 8 day of the 2 mo 1708 they did publish their marriage the second time and were married in the Publick meeting house on the western Branch on the eleaventh day of the 2 mo 1708."

WM. POPE

MARY POPE

Witnesses:

HENRY POPE

SARAH POPE

b. Henry² Pope (see below).

c. Alse² Pope, born in August, 1667. Nothing further is known of her.

d. John² Pope, born August 6, 1670, died circa 1737. His will was probated in 1737. In 1704 he owned 250 acres (29V342, 406 and 34V351) and in 1713 185 acres (10V81) all in Isle of Wight County.

Isle of Wight Will Book, 3/96, Sarah Pope, wife of Henry² Pope, receives an unique legacy: William Faircloth, Isle of Wight, Will 9th January, 1727, recorded 28 May, 1728, contains the following item: "I give and bequeath to Sarah Pope, wife of Henry Pope, the grinding tole from the Corn she brings for her family's use to the Mills during her natural life to have that liberty whenever the Mill shall grind."

HENRY² POPE, born November 30, 1663 (SHAP 6/508 and 27W(1)61); died 28 May 1728 (Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Book 2, page 3. Will recorded 28 October, 1728. Son, John, Executor. Page 149, his estate appraised).

Isle of Wight Will Book, 3, page 127: The Will of Henry² Pope is recorded in 1728. In it he mentions his eleven children. He gives his sons, William, Henry, Richard, Jacob, John, five shillings each and says "he having had his part before." Then mentions daughters, Mary and Jane, giving them one cow and one calf, "each having had her part before." Also to son, Joseph; daughter, Morning; son, Thomas, and son, Samuel, he leaves land as well as cows, calves and horses, etc. He then bequeaths the rest "of my estate both Outdoors and in Doors unto my well beloved wife, Sarah Pope." His wife, Sarah, and son, John, were appointed Executrix and Executor. The will was signed 28th day of May, 1728, and recorded October 28, 1728. His will is also recorded in Isle of Wight Record Book, 1661-1719, page 386.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, page 695, Land Grants, 1674-1705: Henry Pope, Book 8, page 176, 1691, 187 acres; Book 9, page 194, 1699, 72 acres for transportation of persons.

Henry² Pope married in 1684 Sarah Watts, daughter of John Watts and his wife, Alice, daughter of John English (Marriages, Isle of Wight County, 1628-1800, page 42). See Watts Family.

10R106, 110, 257: Henry Pope owned 480 acres of land in Isle of Wight County.

HENRY and Sarah POPE had the following children:
a. William; died 15 January, 1749. He owned land in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, in 1719 and 1729-32. b. Henry; died 23 October, 1758. c. Richard; died 24 September, 1733. Wife, Sarah. Will probated in 1733 in Edgecombe County, North Carolina. Children: Henry, Richard, Jane, Sarah. Richard evidently lived for a time in Pasquotank County, as I find the following from NCH&GR 1/465: "At a Court held at the House of Richard Pope, Pasquotank Precinct, the 3d Monday in July, 1694." d. Jacob. Owned land in Edgecombe Precinct 1729-32. Married Elizabeth. e. John, born in 1700; died April 9, 1745. Married Mourning McKinne—See later. f. Mary; husband, Williams. g. Jane; husband, Brassale. h. Joseph; died 29 January, 1748. i. Morning. Married Jacob Pope, her cousin. j. Thomas. Owned land in Edgecombe Precinct, 1729-32. k. Samuel; died 5 January, 1758; wife, Sarah. Children: Elizabeth, John, Samuel, Mary, William.

Bertie County, North Carolina, Deed Book B, page 107: Henry Pope made a deed of land to John³ Pope of Bertie County, in 1726.

John³ Pope (Henry,² William¹) was born in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in 1700. Moved to Bertie County, North Carolina, thence to Edgecombe County and later to Halifax County. He was known as "Colonel John of Edgecombe and Halifax" and was a man of much prominence in his community at that early date. He died in Edgecombe County April 9, 1745.

CRNC 1/470: John Pope bought land from Barnaby McKinne in 1721 on McHerrin Swamp "where John Pope now liveth."

History of Halifax County, North Carolina, page 10: John and Jacob Pope received grants of land between 1720 and 1730.

CRNC 3/417: John Pope, Justice of the Peace for and within Edgecombe Precinct, Chowan County, May 16, 1732.

CRNC 4/346: On March 16, 1739, John Pope was appointed Commissioner of the Peace with Barnaby McKinne, Joseph Cotton, Thomas Kearney, et al.

NCH&GR 2/303: John Pope was a church warden prior to 1740.

CRNC 4/521: John Pope was added to the list of jury-men for Bertie and Edgecombe February 25, 1739/40.

CRNC 4/651-2, 723, 724: John Pope, member of the General Assembly from Edgecombe, 15 March, 1742; 22 July, 1743; 24 February, 1743-44; 15 November, 1744; 9 April, 1745.

CRNC 4/744: On 9 April, 1745, Mr. James Castlelaw reported to the General Assembly (House of Burgesses) that John Pope, one of the members from Edgecombe, was dead. Report was also made by William Wilson, member from Newberne, that Mr. John Pope is dead.

The offices held by John Pope and the authorities are also mentioned in 24W(1) 45 and 27W(1)58-64.

CRNC 22/245: John Pope owned land in Edgecombe Precinct in 1727-32.

CRNC 4/329-30, 440-4, 711, 588, 626, 631: John Pope is shown as applicant for warrants and grants in 1738, 1740, 1742, etc.

CRNC 4/705: John Pope on November 2, 1744, was admitted to prove rights for 6 whites and 20 blacks for himself; also rights for John Jones and John Langsten.

John³ Pope married Mourning McKinne (1721). She was born circa 1700 and died circa 1760. She was the daughter of Colonel Barnaby McKinne and his wife, Mary (Exum) Ricks, relict of Jacob Ricks who was the daughter of Judge Jeremiah Exum and his wife, Ann Lawrence. (See McKinne, Ricks, Exum and Lawrence families.) Note: Mourning McKinne was, evidently, quite prominent in that section of North Carolina where she lived and there are many references to her in various records, but diligent research fails to find the dates of her birth and death. So, I have approximated these two dates. One authority states that she died "between 1741 and 1755"; another implies that she was alive in 1760; while a third leaves the year in much doubt.

John³ Pope and his wife, Mourning McKinne Pope had six children: a. Henry; wife, Tabitha. They lived and died

in Halifax County, North Carolina. His will, dated January 2, 1764, was proved at the April court, 1764, in that county. Tabitha, family name not known, was evidently his second wife, and he mentions her in his will along with his "eldest son," Burwell, and four younger sons, Willis, John, Henry Augustine and Austin Wiley. b. Jesse Pope; wife, Mary. He died in Georgia in 1818. c. Lewis (Louis) Pope; wife, Ann. d. Winifred Pope; died unmarried in Halifax County, North Carolina. Her will, dated in 1762, mentions her brothers, Jesse, Lewis, Henry, Willis, a cousin; Tabitha and Ann, doubtless the wives of Henry and Lewis, respectively; and Mourning Pope, a cousin. e. John⁴ Pope—see later. f. Barnaby Pope; died in Georgia in 1795. Winifred Pope's will is found in Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 144.

The information in this paragraph may be found in SHAP 6/508 and in 27W(1)61.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, pages 22, 42: In the meantime, in 1732, Governor Burrington appointed . . . John Pope . . . Justices of the Peace.

Same, page 70: To this end (representation in the Assembly from Edgecombe County) in 1743 the county elected John Pope, an influential citizen, to appear before the Assembly and place before the session an actual account of the state of affairs. He was, however, prevented from accomplishing his purpose by being permitted to accept a seat in the Assembly.

Same, page 70: John Alston and John Pope were placed on important committees, 1745, to regulate grievances.

Same, page 157: Footnote, . . . John Pope had 6 white servants . . . 1735.

John⁴ Pope (John,³ Henry,² William¹) was born in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, circa 1728-30, and died 7 February, 1799. He married Elizabeth² Jeffries Boddie circa 1744-45, who was the daughter of Simon and Elizabeth¹ Jeffries and brother of Osborn Jeffries who died in 1793. Osborn's will was recorded in Franklin County, North Carolina, 1793. Elizabeth² Jeffries married John Boddie on December 7, 1734, and was a widow when she

married John⁴ Pope (IofW, 355). John Boddie was living in 1742, as he was mentioned in the will of Elizabeth¹ Jeffries in that year (see Jeffries Family), but the date of his death is not exactly known. Diligent research has failed to find the dates of birth, marriage to John⁴ Pope, and of death of Elizabeth² Jeffries. Dates were not recorded in Granville County, North Carolina, where they lived, prior to 1746.

John⁴ Pope was a planter who lived and died in Granville County, North Carolina. He moved from Edgecombe County to Granville County in 1756. There are in the Office of the Register of Deeds in Granville County many records of land transactions in which he was concerned. These records are dated from 1754 to about 1800 and include six grants from the Earl of Granville, the then Lord Protector of the Province of North Carolina. They total about 6,000 acres. These lands were located in what now are Granville, Franklin, Wake and Durham Counties.

CRNC 25/389-390: John Pope was Justice of the Peace, Edgecombe County, 1749, and Sheriff of Edgecombe County, 1753-55, for which he was paid the salary of £24.

CRNC 23/497: John Pope was a vestryman in St. John's Parish, 1758.

CRNC 25/389: John Pope relieved of a judgment by an act of the General Assembly, 1758.

CRNC 23/369: John Pope, Captain of a company of 120 men in Granville County, 1763.

CRNC 23/993: John Pope, Justice of the Peace, Granville County, in 1776-1778.

Heads of Families, North Carolina, First Census of U. S. 1790, pages 63, 88: John Pope shown a head of a family and on the tax lists of Beaver Dam District, Granville County, and also in the Halifax District. The names of two of his sons, Osborn⁵ and John,⁵ also appear in the Granville County Tax Lists.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, p. 304: Among the earliest families in Granville County, North Carolina, were . . . Popes . . . Jeffreys (Jeffries). And on page 210: These men were leading residents and prominent men.

John⁴ Pope and his wife, Elizabeth, had the following children:

a. Osborn, who was an invalid and died in North Carolina. He was never married, but was possessed of considerable property. I have a copy of his will dated April 3, 1811, and recorded at Oxford, North Carolina, by which he left his property to his brother, John⁵ Pope, and to his sisters, Temperance, Jane and Penellopee. He left his slaves to John⁵ and his first wife, Ann Whitaker, except one girl who was willed to his sister, Jane.

b. Temperance, who married James Blackwell on April 2, 1772, in Halifax County, North Carolina (13W(1)24), and moved to Tennessee. No further record.

c. Penellopee, who married James Weathers and remained in North Carolina. They evidently went to Tennessee later, as I have a letter from a John P. Weathers, dated Carroll County, Tennessee, August 7, 1827, to William Rouse Pope in which he refers to the latter as "cousin" and implies that James was in Tennessee.

d. Jane, who married George Nicholson on May 12, 1775, and moved to Tennessee. She was the grandmother of A. O. P. Nicholson, Judge of the Supreme Court of Tennessee, and of Felix K. Zollicoffer, a brigadier general in the Confederate Army, killed January 19, 1862, at the battle of Mill Spring, Kentucky, in the Civil War. The Nicholson family lived in Maury County, Tennessee.

e. John⁵ Pope—see later.

John⁴ Pope conveyed a parcel of land of 153½ acres, located on the west side of Cedar Creek, Granville County, North Carolina, to his son, John⁵ Pope, on October 26, 1782, for five shillings, North Carolina money. I have the original deed and on it appears the signatures of John⁴ Pope, John⁵ Pope and Samuel Pope.

John⁵ Pope (John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹) was born July 11, 1762, in Granville County, North Carolina. He died January 18, 1828, and is buried at Pope's Chapel, Williamson County, Tennessee. He was married twice, his first wife being Ann Whitaker (born November 21, 1760; died April 8, 1797), whom he married on November 23, 1780,

daughter of Richard Whitaker (Justice of the Peace, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, October, 1749) and Elizabeth Cary of the noted Cary Family of Virginia. They had four sons and two daughters:

a. Martha; married January 12, 1784, Fendall Crump. They had one daughter, Mattie, who married J. W. Alexander of Spring Hill, Tennessee.

b. Lemuel Pope, born July 23, 1786.

c. Thomas Anderson, born February 13, 1789, and had three children, Thomas A. L. being one. All died unmarried.

d. Richard W., born 1791; died March 13, 1802.

e. John W., born October 1, 1793, who married and had six children, John O. and William Campbell being two of them.

f. Elizabeth Pope, born February 13, 1797; married John Andrews.

g. Cary W. Pope, born September 14, 1781; married and had several children. Cary W. was the oldest of these children.

Some Popes of this branch of the family are still living around the old homestead in Williamson County, Tennessee.

John⁵ Pope's second wife was Ann Lucas, daughter of William Lucas. William Lucas was a man of much prominence in North Carolina. (See Lucas Family.)

John Pope and Ann Lucas were married February 21, 1798. The latter was born November 14, 1774; died November 10, 1836, and is buried at Pope's Chapel. Our line of descent is from this second marriage. John⁵ Pope was a Methodist minister who disposed of his land, about 1,500 acres, in Granville County, North Carolina, in 1800 and with his second wife and children of his first wife moved to Tennessee. They settled in Williamson County, where he obtained a large tract of land—about 2,000 acres—near the Maury County line. Documentary evidence in my possession shows the location of this land. This land was joined on the south by that of Daniel⁵ Carter, the writer's great-great-grandfather on the maternal side, and by the land owned by Benjamin⁵ Carter, a brother of Daniel.

Papers in my possession bear evidence of transfers of land between the Pope and Carter families in 1824, 1830 and 1832.

Deed, Benjamin Carter to John Pope, 300 acres, March 9, 1805, Book 1, page 501, Register's Office, Williamson County, Tennessee.

Also in writer's possession is a memorandum giving the boundaries of the Benjamin⁵ Carter land grant. (See Carter Family.)

Foote's Sketches of North Carolina, page 309: "... Granville County . . . sent forth (to Tennessee) crowds of emigrants and numerous ministers in their train." This started in 1791. They were joined by many families of the Scotch-Irish race from Virginia, New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

John⁵ Pope was one of the ministers referred to above. He went to Tennessee in 1800. The McFerrins were among those who migrated from Virginia.

John⁵ Pope gave a tract of land in Williamson County, Tennessee, September 4, 1818, for a meetinghouse which was named Pope's Chapel "for the use of congregations which may assemble for the worship of God," and "it is to be further understood that the pulpit in said house is to be free and accessible to all ministers of the Gospel of a Godly and moral character of any sect or denomination that may think proper to occupy the same, so as not to interfere or raise confusions with each others' appointment." This original paper is in the writer's possession.

John⁵ Pope by his second wife, Ann (Lucas) Pope, had six daughters and two sons:

a. Winifred L., born November 30, 1798; died July 28, 1836. She married T. J. Parham.

b. Mary Crafford, born October 17, 1800; died March 14, 1838, and is buried at Pope's Chapel. She was not married.

c. William Rouse. (See later.)

d. Jane Osborn, born January 25, 1806. Died April 24, 1833, buried at Pope's Chapel. Not married.

e. Candice Jeffries, born May 1, 1808; died January 24, 1836. She married de Graffenreid. Buried at Pope's Chapel.

f. Ammarilla Threft, born June 26, 1810; died May 11, 1834; buried at Pope's Chapel. She married William Baugh and had one child, Ann, who married Armstrong, and died January 4, 1909, near Columbia, Texas.

g. Gustavus Adophus I, born December 12, 1812; died January 13, 1834, and was buried at Columbus, Mississippi, where he had gone for his health. He was not married. He probably had considerable property, as letters in my possession exchanged between him and his brother, William Rouse, frequently mention the making of his will. His letters indicate that he was well educated and possessed of a fine disposition.

h. Ann Lucas, born May 1, 1815; died in Texas, date and place not known. She was married three times, first to S. M. Frosh, second to Mitchell, and third to Follingsbee. She had no children.

William Rouse⁶ Pope (John,⁵ John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹) was born April 8, 1803; died March 14, 1846, and is buried at Pope's Chapel. On June 29, 1830, he married Lesey Jane Gant who was born November 4, 1807; died December 31, 1866, and is buried at Pope's Chapel. This is our line of descent. They were my grandparents. William Rouse made two trips to Texas, probably to settle the affairs of his sister, Ann Lucas. The first trip started April 29, 1841, and ended June 14, 1841. The writer has an account book and letters to his wife describing the first trip but has no record of the second trip. He was possessed of considerable land interests in parts of West Tennessee as well as in Middle Tennessee as is evidenced from letters in my possession.

From William R. Pope to Milton Carter of Maury County, Tennessee, 13¼ acres on Carter's Creek—Book Q, No. 130, page 307, Deed August 8, 1832. Register's Office, Williamson County, Tennessee.

Lesy Jane (Gant) Pope was the third child (of seven children) of William Gant and Leah Norwood Gant. (See Gant Family.)

William Rouse⁶ Pope and his wife, Lesey Jane (Gant) Pope, had the following children:

a. William⁷ Leonidas, born May 22, 1831; died November 5, 1863, and buried at Pope's Chapel. He married Sarah Faris and they had two children:

(1) Etta; married Ferd Hadley of Brentwood, Williamson County, Tennessee. This couple had two children, Elise and Sarah. Etta lived for many years in Nashville, Tennessee, with her daughter, Sarah. Elise died in Colorado, where she had gone for her health.

(2) Willie; married John Meek of Strawberry Plains, Knox County, Tennessee. They had several children.

William Leonidas Pope and his wife, Sarah, went to Texas in 1852 but returned to Tennessee a few years later. He was admitted to the practice of law in Maury County, Tennessee, in December, 1854, and in Mississippi in 1861. Shortly after the outbreak of the Civil War he enlisted—May, 1861—in Company A, Ninth Tennessee Battalion of Cavalry, with his brother, Gustavus Adolphus⁷ Pope—see later—and was captured by the Federals at Fort Donelson, Tennessee, February 6, 1862, and sent to Camp Morton, Indiana, thence to Camp Chase, Ohio. On November 4, 1863, he was shot by a guard for an alleged infringement of the rules and died about 4:00 a.m., November 5, 1863. A letter in my possession gives this information.

b. Gustavus Adolphus⁷ (William Rouse,⁶ John,⁵ John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹), born January 17, 1834; died May 4, 1923; buried in Maplewood Cemetery, Pulaski, Tennessee. On November 4, 1875, he married Myra Belle Carter, who was born May 12, 1853; died October 12, 1926, and rests by the side of her husband. They were the parents of the writer.

c. John Lucas Pope, born September 10, 1836, and died in his fourteenth year on July 9, 1850. Buried at Pope's Chapel.

d. Lesey Ann, born February 20, 1839; died January 25, 1911. On December 8, 1858, she married John D. McLemore, of Maury County, Tennessee. They with their children moved to Abilene, Texas, where their descendants still live. They had the following children:

(1) Atkins Pope McLemore, born May 17, 1864; died February 11, 1928. He married Josephine Craig, born February 3, 1866, on September 7, 1887. They had the following children:

(a) Florille, born May 17, 1890; married Max Bentley, June 1, 1911. They have the following children: Alice Louise, Josephine Craig and Barbara. They live at Abilene, Texas.

(b) Frances, born October 5, 1896; married Richard Maxwell, April 19, 1921. They have one child, Virginia. They live at Abilene, Texas.

(c) Lesey Virginia, born November 18, 1896; married John Caro Russell, April 12, 1924. They have one child, John Caro, Jr., and live at Abilene, Texas.

(2) Sidney Gant McLemore, born May 1, 1867; died October 28, 1929, at Charleston, Missouri.

(3) Janie, born January 24, 1870; married James Colby Thomas, November, 1901. She is now deceased.

(4) Robina, born February 10, 1873, has never married and lives in Dallas, Texas.

e. James Rouse Pope, born August 6, 1841; died October, 1862, and was buried at Pope's Chapel. He was a member of Company E, Fourth Tennessee Infantry, in the Confederate Army at the time of his death.

f. Mary Robina Pope (born October 23, 1844; died April 10, 1915). In January, 1877, she married John W. McKissack (born March 16, 1849, and died April 5, 1923), of Spring Hill, Tennessee. They had two children:

(1) Orville Pope, born April 29, 1878; was married June 26, 1909, to Myra Thompson, born in 1883. They lived at Spring Hill and had two children:

(a) Thompson Pope, born October 3, 1910, and

(b) Mary Leonora, born September 13, 1913.

(2) Lena, born July 25, 1880, and died unmarried, February 11, 1900.

Gustavus Adolphus⁷ Pope (William Rouse,⁶ John,⁵ John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹) and Myra Belle (Carter) Pope—see above—were the parents of the writer. Gustavus A. Pope enlisted with his brother, William Leonidas Pope, in May, 1861, in Company A, Ninth Tennessee Battalion of Cavalry, Confederate Army. He was sent to a camp near Nashville, and in the early fall was sent to Fort Henry, Tennessee, under the noted Confederate Cavalry Leader, General Nathan Bedford Forrest, and then to Fort Donelson, where he was captured on February 16, 1862. He was a prisoner of war for seven months at Camp Douglas, near Chicago. In September, 1862, he was exchanged at Vicksburg, Mississippi, and sent to the Port Hudson Department. He was then commissioned a captain of cavalry by President Jefferson Davis of the Confederate States, and served as such until the close of the war. From the Port Hudson Department his command was sent to the Army of the Tennessee at Dalton, Georgia, and served under General Wheeler. Wheeler's cavalry was sent to the Carolinas. He surrendered with his command at Charlotte, North Carolina, in May, 1865, and returned to his home in Tennessee to save what he could from the wreck left by the War. He was now left with his mother and a sister to care for as well as the home place. He was a druggist and prescriptionist at Pulaski, Tennessee, for many years before his retirement from business.

For many years prior to his death, he was an Elder in the Presbyterian Church at Pulaski. He was a high official in the Knights Templars in Tennessee and a member of the local Board of Education in Pulaski. He died in his ninetyeth year and up to a few days prior to his death was in excellent health.

Myra Belle¹ (Carter) Pope, the mother of the writer, was the eldest child of Benjamin Carter and Cynthia Holland (Rivers) Carter. (See Carter Family.) She died at her home in Pulaski where she had lived for so many years. A consistent member of the Pulaski Episcopal Church in

which her parents had taken such a prominent part, she was greatly interested in all its activities. For 35 years prior to her death she was an invalid, but bore her afflictions with characteristic fortitude.

Gustavus A. Pope and his wife, Myra Belle (Carter) Pope, had the following children:

a. Gustavus Adolphus⁸ Pope III, born December 23, 1876; died February 23, 1921, and was buried in Birmingham, Alabama. On November 19, 1902, he married Sada Hawkins of Birmingham, and they had one child, Myra Belle III, born April 2, 1904, who married Walter Kennedy of Birmingham, September 28, 1926. Going to Birmingham in his late teens, he engaged in the drug business and then in the real estate business, in both of which he was successful. He was a devoted husband and father and among his associates "his word was his bond." His widow resides in Birmingham.

b. Frank Carter⁸ Pope, born April 27, 1878, died February 25, 1928, and was buried in Grace Episcopal Churchyard at Woodside, Maryland. He studied law under Flournoy Rivers, a well known attorney of Pulaski, Tennessee, was admitted to the Bar, practiced in New York City for a few years, and then settled in Washington, D. C., where he practiced until his death. On October 18, 1906, he married Eva Moore of Pulaski and they lived at Forest Glen, Maryland. They had the following children:

- (1) Eva Moore, born October 3, 1907.
- (2) Gustavus Adolphus IV, born August 19, 1909.
- (3) Benjamin Carter, born September 11, 1911.
- (4) Mary Rivers, born October 26, 1913.
- (5) Ethel, born August 17, 1916.

Gustavus A. IV, as the eldest direct male descendant of his generation from Capt. Benjamin Carter, is now a member of the "Society of the Cincinnati." Carter's widow and children reside in Washington, D. C.

c. William Rivers⁸ (Gustavus,⁷ William Rouse,⁶ John,⁵ John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹), born January 7, 1880, enlisted in the Regular Army in May, 1899, and was sent to

the Philippine Islands where he participated in several campaigns against the Insurgents. He was commissioned a second lieutenant in the Regular Army and sent to the Second Cavalry during the first occupation of Cuba shortly after the end of the Spanish-American War. He served two subsequent tours of duty in the Philippine Islands and in 1935-36 served in the Panama Canal Zone. On his trips to the Philippine Islands he was twice sent via the Suez Canal. He had thus served three tours in the Philippines and one tour in Cuba in the first ten years of his service. He graduated from the Troop Officers Course at the Cavalry School in 1912, and in 1926 he graduated from the Advanced Course at the Cavalry School, going from there to the Command and General Staff School from which he graduated in 1927. During World War I he served with the 89th and 92nd Infantry Divisions, going to France with the latter unit. In France he was promoted and sent to the 29th Infantry Division in which he commanded the 113th Regiment during the Meuse-Argonne Offensive. After the Armistice, he was appointed a Deputy Provost Marshall, General, American Expeditionary Forces in France and placed in charge of over 9,000 Military Police at the American Embarkation Center at Le Mans, France. He commanded the Fourth U. S. Cavalry at Fort Meade, South Dakota, for two years. This was the regiment in which he started his military service over 30 years before. While at Fort Meade, he was also in charge of 35 to 40 camps of the Civilian Conservation Corps. In 1935, the National Geographic-Army Air Corps Stratosphere Flight took place in which the balloon ascended to a point 13.9 miles above the surface of the earth. Colonel Pope was instrumental in the success of this flight and was rewarded by the National Geographic Society with an Honorary Life Membership in the Society.

For his services in France, he was decorated with the Distinguished Service Medal and was again cited for the same decoration while in France. He was twice decorated with the Silver Star for gallantry in action and was awarded the Croix de Guerre with Palm by the French Government.

He is a member of the Washington, D. C., Chapter, Sons of the Revolution.

On October 20, 1903, he married Virginia McFerrin, born April 17, 1882, who was the daughter of Rev. and Mrs. John A. McFerrin of the noted Methodist family of Tennessee. (See McFerrin Family History.) On October 31, 1939, Colonel Pope, at his own request and after over forty years service, was retired from the Army.

William Rivers Pope and his wife, Virginia McFerrin Pope, had one child, a daughter, Virginia McFerrin, born at Fort Assinniboine, Montana, February 8, 1907. (See later.)

d. Julia, born December 4, 1881. Never married and lived the last years of her life in Washington, D. C. She died June 7, 1940, and is buried in Rock Creek Cemetery in that city.

e. Mary Lesey, born June 19, 1885, was married on November 11, 1913, to Louis Cartall, born February 8, 1890, and died July 24, 1921, and was buried at Trenton, Illinois. They lived for several years in Huttig, Arkansas, where Louis was engaged in the lumber business. They had the following children:

(1) Louis, Jr., born July 29, 1918, and

(2) Virginia, born October 29, 1921.

Mary Lesey resides at Marfa, Texas, and her children are married.

f. Myra Belle II, born June 21, 1891, and died August 19, 1899. She was buried in Maplewood Cemetery at Pulaski, Tennessee. See Carter Family History for mention of this death.

All the Pope children of this, the eighth, generation were born at Pulaski, Tennessee.

Virginia McFerrin⁹ Pope (William Rivers,⁸ Gustavus A,⁷ William Rouse,⁶ John,⁵ John,⁴ John,³ Henry,² William¹), daughter of William Rivers⁸ Pope and his wife, Virginia⁶ McFerrin Pope, was born at Fort Assinniboine, Montana, where her father was on duty, on February 8, 1907. After attending many schools over the country because of the many places of duty of her father, she was graduated with

special honors from the University of Chicago in 1930, receiving the degree of Ph.B., and was elected to the Society of Phi Beta Kappa. In 1931 she received the degree of M.A.

On the 29th of June, 1935, she was married to Lieut. Leon J. Livingston, Quartermaster Reserve Corps, U. S. Army, in the Army Chapel at Fort Meade, South Dakota.

Lieutenant Livingston was born at Sumner, Iowa, on January 11th, 1900, was the son of Jacob Livingston (born at Ghent, New York, on September 12, 1856, and died July 4th, 1941) and his wife, Katherine Price (born at Kettig-on-the-Ruhr, Cologne, Germany, 10th October, 1861, and died 20 June, 1930). Lieutenant Livingston rendered exceptional services during World War II, as Executive Officer of the Bureau of Public Relations of the War Department in Washington, D. C., and received the Legion of Merit and the Commendation Ribbon. He is now (1950) a Colonel of the Quartermaster Corps of the Regular Army.

Colonel and Mrs. Livingston have three children:

(1) Katherine¹⁰ Pope, born June 26, 1937, Omaha, Nebraska.

(2) William Pope,¹⁰ born January 22, 1940, at Pulaski, Tennessee.

(3) Richard McFerrin,¹⁰ born February 3, 1943, Pulaski, Tennessee (Richard's second name being that of his maternal grandmother's family).

Line of Descent:

William¹ Pope married Marie; had

Henry² Pope married Sarah³ Watts; had

John³ Pope married Mourning³ McKinne; had

John⁴ Pope married Elizabeth² Jeffries; had

John⁵ Pope married Ann² Lucas; had

William Rouse⁶ Pope married Lesey Jane⁴ Gant. (See Pope Line.)

While I found no record of any direct ancestor of mine by the name of Pope who fought in the Revolutionary War, I found many entries of collateral ancestors who did. These are listed merely for information.

Colonial Records of North Carolina:

Vol. 9, page 696: Simon Pope, Lieutenant and Ensign,

Regiment of Militia muster, 18 November, 1773.

Vol. 10, page 99: Simon Pope, on Committee of Safety, Pitt County, 1775.

Simon Pope, Ensign in Fourteenth Company of Militia.

Vol. 10, page 187: Henry Pope was appointed Ensign of First Regiment, North Carolina Continental troops, September 1, 1775.

Page 518: Willis Pope appointed second lieutenant from Hillsborough District for Battalion to be raised, April 16, 1776.

Page 596: Jacob Pope did actually take up arms and lead forth to war, as captain of a company of 49 men. He was a Freeholder and lived in Bladen County, 20 April, 1776.

Vol. 10, page 944: Henry Pope appointed captain, November 29, 1776, of the Eighth Regiment. (Vol. 22, page 909: refused appointment.)

Page 971: Jacob Pope, now a prisoner in Stanton Town, Augusta County, Virginia, permitted to return to Edgecombe County, North Carolina, taking oath to State and giving £500 bond for future good behavior, December 16, 1776. This was on petition of Elizabeth Pope.

Vol. 13, page 511: Samuel Pope enlisted 5 May, 1777, for three years. Sick at Valley Forge. He belonged to Capt. John Ingles' Company, Second North Carolina Battalion, September 9, 1778.

Page 519: William Pope, enlisted September 4, 1777, for three years. On command in New Jersey, Lieutenant Colonel Harney's Company, Second North Carolina Battalion.

Page 550: Jacob Pope admitted as citizen 23 January, 1779, North Carolina Legislature.

Pages 647-648: Jacob Pope, same ante.

Page 654: Jacob Pope, Governor concurs. (See Jacob Pope above.)

Vol. 16, page 2: Burwell Pope, Member North Carolina House, 1782, Wake County.

Vol. 17, page 239: Samuel Pope receives £105-18-10 for his army service in North Carolina Line. (See above.)

Page 973: Willis Pope on July 14, 1781, exempted from Militia duty.

Vol. 22, page 323: Samuel Pope, Sergeant, Capt. Thomas Graves, Company, Craven County. (Not the Samuel Pope above—different county.)

Page 325: George Pope, Jr., Private, Militia List of Craven County, 1751.

Volume 16, page 1134: Samuel Pope, Private, Alderson's Company, Fifth Regiment, North Carolina, Line of Continental troops, enlisted 15 May, 1777.

Page 1136: Samuel Pope, Sergeant, Shephard's Company, Tenth Regiment, North Carolina Continental Line. Enlisted 5 May, 1777. Private, June, 1778. Discharged 30 June, 1779.

Page 1136: William Pope, Sergeant, Shephard's Company, Tenth North Carolina Continental Line. Enlisted 5 May, 1777. Private, June, 1778.

Virginia Soldiers of 1776, Vol. 3:

Page 1253: William Pope and John Pope members (privates) of first partisan legion commanded by Brigadier-General Armand, Marquis de la Roucrie. Discharged November 15, 1783. Entitled to 200 acres of land each from Virginia.

Page 1272: Henry Pope, member of company clearing road to "Kaintuck" and entitled to grant of land from Virginia.

ENGLISH FAMILY

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page, 102: Capt. John English, Member of the House of Burgesses, Virginia, 1659.

Same, page 523: Capt. John English, Member of the House of Burgesses, 1658-59.

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Book 1661-1716: The will of John English was made in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 13th August, 1678, and was proved in the Court held for the Isle of Wight County the 9th day of October, 1678. In his will he wills "to my loving son-in-law, John Watts, all my wearing apparel, both linen and woolen." And, "will and bequeath to my daughter, Alice Watts, six yards of serge." Also, "it is my will and desire that my

daughter, Frances Ilis, and my son-in-law, John Watts, to be the overseers of this my will performed." He mentions other children and grandchildren, but his wife is not mentioned.

7W(1)240: Will of John English, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Records: "To loving dafter, Frances Ilis, all my pictures; 10 sh. to dafter, Elizabeth Church; Son-in-law, John Watts; dafter, Alice Watts; dafter Mary English." Dated 13 August, 1678; proved 9 October, 1678.

Marriages, Isle of Wight County, 1628-1800, page 53: John Watts and Alice English, daughter of John English, 1678, W&D Bk. 2, page 166.

Therefore, this John English was the father of Alice English who married John Watts and was the grandfather of Sarah Watts who married Henry² Pope.

Descent:

Captain John¹ English had

Alice² English who married John² Watts and had

Sarah³ Watts who married Henry² Pope. (See Pope Line.)

EXUM FAMILY

Norfolk County, Virginia, Book B, page 24: In Norfolk County we find in a court record, 30th January, 1646, that "John Nansel came into this country with Richard Exam for three years."

State Land Office, Richmond, Virginia, Vol. 2, page 244, we find that Sir William Berkeley did grant unto Richard Axum and Thomas Godwin 550 acres situated on Rappahannock River . . . for the transportation of 11 persons. This was on May 22, 1650. This grant also appears in another patent. It will be noted that in the 550 acre patent mention is made of "Axum's Book," clearly showing the Axums or Exums were settled here prior to the date of these grants.

This lengthy narrative says that the Exums were in Virginia as early as 1640. In the early records the name is spelled variously, as Exam, Exom, Exwin, and Esum—in one place copied as Ewen. (In early days the same name

was spelled in different ways—due, perhaps, to bad handwriting or carelessness.)

Thomas Exum with wife, Jane, was the first to emigrate to America. He had a brother, Richard, who had two sons, Jeremiah and Thomas. No record showing when Thomas came to America, but he was here in 1650.

In Rappahannock records at State Library, Richmond, Vol. 1, pages 156-157, we find: that "Thomas Exum (Exwin?) and wife, Jane," were mentioned on January 1, 1660.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 450: William Exum, first of the family in Virginia, came over with his wife, Jane, and son, Francis. First record found is on March 27, 1671, when he witnessed a power of attorney. On June 9, 1695, he witnessed a deed. He owned considerable land in Isle of Wight County.

Same, page 451: William Exum made his will 3 December, 1701. Probated February 10, 1700 (1702?).

Isle of Wight, Virginia, Book 2, page 254: Jeremiah Exum was in the Isle of Wight County, Virginia, as early as 1686, his signature being attached to the will of Michael (I) Macquinney (McKinne) as a witness, April 15, 1686.

Isle of Wight, Book 1688-1704, page 9: Jeremiah Exum was one of the Associate Judges of the Court of Isle of Wight County in 1693 and in 1694 (Isle of Wight Book, 1661-1719, page 298).

North Carolina General Register, 1/470: Jeremiah Exum was one of the Justices of the Peace of the Isle of Wight County in 1693-1694 and died in 1720. His will was dated March 28, 1720, and his wife's will was dated March 27, 1727.

7W(1)259: Jeremiah Exum assisted in appraising the estate of Thomas Cullen, October 23, 1689. Thomas Cullen is also mentioned in a deed by Jeremiah Exum and Ann, his wife, in such a way as to suggest a relationship to him and to the Lawrence Family. (NCH&GR 1/94.) An allusion to the will of John Lawrence is made in the Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Deed Book, 1704-1715, page 115. This record shows that John Lawrence left a will dated January 2, 1696/7 in Nansemond County, Virginia. The records of

Nansemond County are destroyed. This John Lawrence was the son of John Lawrence who died April 26, 1686. (Richmond, Virginia, Land Office Book No. 7, page 176.)

Isle of Wight Great Book, page 291: The only son of Jeremiah Exum and his wife, Ann, died before his parents but not before he had accumulated a large estate in Virginia and North Carolina. He was unmarried and his estate was inherited by his sisters. Their husbands signed with them in the final settlement and thus we know to whom they were married.

SHAP 6/409, 7/209-210: It is evident that Jeremiah and his wife, Ann, belonged to the Society of Friends, as their names are mentioned frequently in the Quaker records.

7W(1)253 and Isle of Wight Deed Book 1661-1719, page 436: William Exum makes his will 3rd day of December, 1700, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, and mentions his wife, Jane; daughter, Deborah; sons, William and "ffra" Exum.

Isle of Wight Book 1686-1704, page 9: At a court holden in Isle of Wight County, 23rd of 9th Anno, 1693, Mr. Jere Exum was one of the Justices. Mr. William Exum was allowed .0300 for "one wolfe killed in a pitt."

Isle of Wight Book 1, page 8: This may certify that there is due William Exum 450 acres of land for transportation of William Exum, Jane, his wife, Francis, his son . . . 9th, 1693.

NCH&Gen. Mag. Records, 1-1-94, Book "W": Jeremiah Exum and wife, Ann, Isle of Wight County, transferred 138 acres of land to Francis Branch on September 22, 1707.

SHAP 6 and 7, pages 409-209, 210: Jeremiah Exum and his wife were Quakers. Note the affirmation of his wife as Executrix of his will. One of their daughters married, first a Quaker, Jacob Ricks, and, second, married Barnaby McKinne. (See McKinne Family.)

SHAP 7/309: Issue of the marriage of Jeremiah Exum and Ann (Lawrence) Exum were: a. Capt. Richard Exum, died unmarried; Mary Exum, married, first, Jacob Ricks, and, second, Barnaby McKinne (Isle of Wight Great Book, page 291, and will of Ann Exum); c. Sarah Exum, married her cousin, Robert Lawrence, Jr.

Note: Practically all the above may be found in 27W(1)-57 et seq.

Isle of Wight Great Book, page 21: The will of Jeremiah Exum was recorded March 28, 1720.

Isle of Wight, Virginia, Will Book, No. 3, page 19: The will of Ann Exum, wife of Jeremiah Exum, was recorded March 27, 1727.

Isle of Wight County, page 487: Jeremiah Exum owned land in Nansemond County between 1683 and 1705.

Same, page 493: On November 22, 1704, Jeremiah Exum and his wife, Ann, with others, sell land known as "Black Rock" in North Carolina. Some of the others were John Lawrence and his wife, Mary.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 704, *and* North Carolina Genealogical Register, 1/470: Jeremiah Exum was Justice of the Peace, Isle of Wight County, 1693.

The above plainly imply that Jeremiah was the son of Richard Exum and his wife, Jane. Also that Ann Exum was a Lawrence before her marriage to Jeremiah Exum. (See Lawrence Family.)

Marriage bonds of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1628-1800:

Page 106: Mary Exum, daughter of Jeremiah Exum of Isle of Wight County, married Jacob Rickesis, son of Isaac Rickesis, 14 October, 1699. (Page 136, Minute Book, Lower Norfolk Meeting, 1673-1709, Quaker Records.)

Same, page —: Ann Exum, daughter of Jeremiah Exum, married George Green, 1705. (W&D Book 2, page 475.)

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County:

Page 169: In 1702, the magistrates and militia of Isle of Wight County prepared an address of loyalty to Queen Anne. Signed by the following officers of militia: . . . Capt. Richard Exum. . . .

Marriages, Isle of Wight County:

Page 46: William Scott and Mourning Exum, daughter of Jeremiah Exum, 1719. (DK 2, page 291; WB 3, page 19.)

WCHH22 2 387: Abstract of Conveyances, Chowan County, Book W: Richard Eason and Robert Lawrence to Col. Thomas Pollock. Robert Lawrence, Jr., of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, by power of attorney made by Robert Lawrence, Sr. and wife, Jane and Jeremiah Eason and wife, Ann (Lawrence), to sell Black Rock, 200 acres. 22nd day of —, 1704.

Same page 34: Jeremiah Eason and wife, Ann, of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, convey 120 acres in North Carolina. 25 May, 1697.

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Book 2, page 2: Jeremiah Eason, deceased, Elizabeth, Hisworthy, Christian, Sarah, Mary, Jane. Died September 2, 1720. Recorded March 28, 1720. (Note: There are many evident errors in dates in these early days. This is due to the fact that they used both the Julian and Gregorian calendars.)

Last Will of North Carolina by Worth S. Ray, page 612: Ann Lawrence, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Lawrence, married Jeremiah Eason. (Note: Other authorities say that the Ann Lawrence was the daughter of John Lawrence who made his will in 1696. I believe that the latter is correct.)

Line of Descent:

Richard Eason married Jane and had
Jeremiah Eason who married Ann Lawrence and had
Mary Eason who married Barnaby McNamee and had
Mourning McNamee who married John Page. (See Page Line.)

CANT FAMILY

CINC 4 625: Council held at Edenton, North Carolina, 15 March, 1742, John Cant petitions for 120 acres in Edgecombe County.

CINC 10 252 371, and 22 376: William Cant was a member with William Cant, Jr., John Cant and Robert Cant, of Capt. Sugar Jones' company, Granville County, North Carolina Regiment, October 2, 1754.

A William Gant was a member of the Rowan County, North Carolina, Committee of Safety, September 20, 1775.

Edward Gant and his wife, Elizabeth, had the following children: a. John (wife, Ann); b. Thomas; c. Cary; d. Sary.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1760-1800, page 218: Will of Edward Gant was recorded in Orange County, 1783. (It is believed that he died in 1781.) The will mentions, besides his wife and children, above, John, a brother. Was this John the one who petitioned for 150 acres in Edgecomb County in 1743?

John Gant and his wife, Ann, had the following children: a. William (born July 17, 1773; died December 2, 1816); married Leah Norwood — (see Norwood Family); b. John, married Nancy Judge on April 28, 1792; c. James; d. Isham; e. Hannah Hoist; f. Zachariah; married Sarah McCracken, 1804; g. Kezia; h. Sarah; i. Mary Riggens.

John Gant's will was recorded in Orange County, North Carolina, in 1800 and mentions his wife and children above.

William Gant and Leah Norwood were married June 16, 1804, either at Louisburg, Franklin County, or at Hillsboro, Orange County, North Carolina, probably the former place. They had seven children; the third was Lesey Jane Gant (born November 4, 1807; died December 31, 1866), who married William Rouse⁶ Pope. See Pope Family.)

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1760-1800, page 116: Franklin County, will of James Gant, wife, Elizabeth, 1793.

26W(1)247: October 4, 1797, a John Gant receives a legacy from the estate of John Wilhoite—no names of places. John Gant's wife was Elizabeth, daughter of John Wilhoite.

Line of Descent:

Edward¹ Gant married Elizabeth and had

John² Gant who married Ann and had

William³ Gant who married Leah⁶ Norwood and had

Lesey⁴ Jane Gant who married William Rouse⁶ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

JEFFRIES FAMILY

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Book 1, page 8: Richard Jeffries' estate appraisal order August 11, 1666. Signed by Alice Councilling, the relict, September 10, 1666 (page 45). She married, second, John Councilling who requested the Administration Recorded October 25, 1666.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 158: Mentions "the Right Honorable Herbert Jeffreys (in Isle of Wight County) as one of the commissioners to inquire into the grievances of His Majesty's subjects in Virginia," 1676/7.

Same, page 377: Simon Jeffries married Elizabeth Pottle, daughter of Josshua Pottle. Her first husband was John Hilliard. She made her will in Northampton County, North Carolina, January 28, 1742 (Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 184), and it was proved at May Court, 1743. This was a nuncupative will proven before John Dawson by Osborne Jeffreys and Rachael Bollen, and bequeaths all property to daughter, Elizabeth Boddie.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 184: On June 20, 1742, she made her will (another) in Northampton County, North Carolina, and she mentions sons, John Hilliard, Osborne Jeffreys, Robert Hilliard, William Hilliard, and daughter, Elizabeth, wife of John Boddie.

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 355: Capt. Simon Jeffries died circa 1734, and on December 7, 1734, a meeting was held at the house of Elizabeth Jeffries, widow, to complete the division of Capt. Simon Jeffries' estate between the widow and the two children, Osborne and Betty (Elizabeth).

Same, pages 355, 377: John Boddie of South Carolina and Elizabeth Jeffries were married on December 7, 1734.

CRNC 2/564: At a Council held at Eden, 3rd day of April, 1725, petition of Simon Jeffries showing that Elizabeth Jeffries and Osborne Jeffries patented several tracts of land, 1721, in Bertie County.

NCH&GR 3/410: Captain . . . Jeffreys and Mrs. Joannah Taylor were married August 9, 1705.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 291: Capt. Osborn Jeffrey, Captain of Granville County Company, Col. William Eaton's Regiment, 1754.

The above shows that John Boddie, who married Elizabeth Jeffries 7 December, 1734, was alive at the time of Elizabeth¹ Jeffries wills (1742), but I have found no record of his death. His widow, Elizabeth² Jeffries, married John⁴ Pope. Elizabeth² died after her brother Osborne who died in 1793 (his will was recorded 1793, Franklin County, North Carolina), but I have been unable to find any record of her birth or marriage to John⁴ Pope. However, since many authorities say that women married early in those times, I am assuming that she was between 18 and 19 years of age when she married John Boddie in 1734. This would indicate she was born circa 1715.

John⁴ Pope and Elizabeth Jeffries Boddie had five children, the fifth being John⁵ Pope, who was born July 11, 1762. Now, since widows also married not so long after the deaths of their husbands (I read of one instance in which a widow married the second time within a few weeks of the death of her first husband), and since JOHN⁵ Pope, the fifth of the children of John⁴ Pope and Elizabeth was born July 11, 1762, it seems reasonable to put the time of their marriage circa 1744-45.

As to the John Boddie who married Elizabeth² Jeffries, in 1734, see the Thomas Family, which shows that he was the son of John Boddie and Elizabeth Thomas, sister of Barnaby Thomas, who made his will (Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1647-1800, Book 2, page 4), and mentions his brother-in-law, John⁴ Dawson.

The will of Barnaby Thomas is given in NCH&GR 1/77 and in Abstract of Wills, Chowan County, North Carolina, December 11, 1735, and was dated October 5, 1735—proved at the Court of December 11, 1735.

I made no effort to ascertain anything about the "Right Honorable Herbert Jeffries . . ." mentioned above. He is

mentioned in the same authority, page 165, as "Governor Jeffreys" of Virginia, July 14, 1677.

I could find nothing further about the Richard Jeffries mentioned in the first paragraph above although it could be possible that Capt. Simon Jeffries was the son of Richard and Alice.

Line of Descent:

Simon¹ Jeffries married Elizabeth Pottle and had

Elizabeth² Jeffries, who married John⁴ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

LAWRENCE FAMILY

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia:

Pages 489-490-491-492: The lineage of John Lawrence, father of Ann Exum, the wife of Jeremiah Exum, is as follows: Thomas Lawrence of Chelsea, Middlesex, England, goldsmith, married Martha, daughter of Anthony Cage of London. He received a grant of arms in 1593. They were, "Argent, a Cross Raguly Gules." Thomas died October 28, 1593, aged 54, and was buried in Chelsea. His children were: . . . Sir John² Lawrence . . . Baronet and merchant of London and was associated with the Bennetts (a prominent family) of London in trading with the Isle of Wight. He was created a baronet by James I. He married Grissel, daughter and co-heir of Gervase Gibbons of Beneden in Kent. He made his will the 1st of October, 1638, and it was probated 21 June, 1638-39.

(Note: The following is of collateral interest only as our line is descended from Robert³ Lawrence, who was born in 1639—of whom later: Sir John² Lawrence, son of Sir John¹ Lawrence, died in 1638 and is buried in Chelsea. His heir was Sir Thomas³ Lawrence, Baronet, who accompanied Lionel Copley to Maryland and was Secretary of the Colony. On May 1, 1698, Sir Thomas³ Lawrence, as President of the Council, became acting Governor of Maryland and served until Governor Nicholson arrived. He died in England and was buried at Chelsea, April, 1714, the title becoming extinct.)

Reverting to Sir John² Lawrence, he mentions in his will his "younger" children: Ann, Robert, Francis, Grissel and Henry. He leaves them £900 "apiece."

Robert³ Lawrence's migration to Virginia coincides closely with the date of his father's death in 1638. He probably came over three or four years prior to 1642, when he received two grants of land on the same day, as grants were issued usually several years after arrival of the grantees. He was a Puritan and, later, turned Quaker. Robert³ Lawrence was a Justice of the Peace in Nansemond County, Virginia, in 1659-60. His wife's name was Elizabeth and they had: Robert, born 1639; George; Henry; and John, born circa 1644, died before April 26, 1682 (Richmond, Virginia, Land Office Book, No. 7, page 176).

Same, page 491, et seq.: On August 25, 1642, a Robert Lawrence obtained land patents for transportation of himself and wife, Elizabeth. He probably came over three or four years before as his oldest son, Robert, Jr., was born in 1639. His parents were Robert and Elizabeth. Robert, Jr., and wife, Elizabeth, had John Lawrence, who made his will in Nansemond County (page 444) 2 January, 1686. His wife's name was Mary. She signed as "Mary Lawrence, widow" after 1700.

Same, page 305: Robert Lawrence, "son and heir of Robert Lawrence, dec'd," sells land 28 September, 1643.

Same, page 125: One of the first persons to receive a grant on the 25th of September, 1666, was Robert Lawrence, Jr., of the Isle of Wight and Nansemond.

Same, page 169: In 1702, the magistrates and militia prepared an address of loyalty to Queen Anne. Signed by . . . John Lawrence . . . Cornet.

Same, page 179: John Lawrence, Vestryman of Old Brick Church (near Smithfield), but dates of service not given.

Same, page 184: At a Court held November 5, 1722, . . . John Lawrence, Captain of Militia . . ."

Same, page 491: Robert Lawrence, Justice of the Peace, Nansemond County, 1659/60.

Same, page 492: Robert Lawrence, Jr., born 1639, wife, Jane—will 1720. Children: Robert; daughter, married Henry Gay; daughter, married John Gay.

Same, page 444: John Lawrence made his will in Nansemond, 2 January, 1696. Wife's name, Mary. After 1700, she signed as "Mary Lawrence, widow."

Same, page 497: Ann Lawrence married Jeremiah Exum. This Ann was daughter of John Lawrence who made his will in 1696.

Line of Descent:

Thomas¹ Lawrence married Martha Cage and had
 Sir John² Lawrence who married Grissel Gibbons and had
 Robert³ Lawrence who married Elizabeth and had
 John⁴ Lawrence who married Mary and had
 Ann⁵ Lawrence who married Jeremiah² Exum and had
 Mary³ Exum who married Barnaby² McKinne and had
 Mourning³ McKinne who married John³ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

LENOIR FAMILY

Biographical History of North Carolina, Vol. 2, page 219, and "Happy Valley" by Thomas Felix Hickerson, page 159: The Lenoir Family were of Huguenotic parentage and came from France circa 1740 and settled in Brunswick County, Virginia, where they appeared to have prospered. The first of the name was Thomas Lenoir (died 1765), who married Mourning Crawley (born 1707). They lived for years in Brunswick County but in 1759/60 emigrated to Edgecombe County, North Carolina, where Thomas died in 1765. They had ten children, the fourth LEAH, born 1737, died 1831, said to have first married Mr. Whitaker, and, second, John Wall Norwood. (See Norwood Family.)

Leah was the sister of General William Lenoir, a celebrated hero of the Revolutionary War from North Carolina who was in the Battle of King's Mountain and who held many positions of prominence in North Carolina. He died in 1839 at an advanced age.

Line of Descent:

Thomas¹ Lenoir married Mourning Crawley and had Leah² Lenoir who married John Wall⁵ Norwood and had Leah⁶ Norwood who married William³ Gant and had Lesey Jane⁴ Gant who married William Rouse⁶ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

LUCAS FAMILY

There are many Lucases mentioned in Virginia history but only those which might have a bearing on our line are recorded. I have not been able to definitely connect any of them with the William Lucas of North Carolina who married Ann Burbridge and who, doubtless, were the parents of Ann Lucas who married John⁵ Pope in 1798.

13V441: Will of William Brent of Kenyll, 7 May, 1494, proved 1 June, 1494, bequeaths to Robert Lucas "my best gown"; to William Lucas, "my second best gown"; to Maud Lucas, a "nutte." Bequests to John Lucas, Sr., son of my wife; to John Lucas, his brother; to Walter Lucas, their brother.

5V94, 95: Robert Lucas and Roger Lucas came to Virginia circa 1630-31.

5V214: Robert Lucas, 150 acres, Charles River County, Virginia, April, 1636, for transportation of three persons.

8V71: Court and Council Records, Virginia, August 16, 1644, "Provision for William Lucas and family, he having two other men with him."

2N13: "At a Court Holden upon xxyth of April, 1647, . . . William Lucas . . . was nominate and elect and appoymt to bee Churchwardens for parish of Lynhaven and oath adm. forthwith unto them."

14W(1)60: The will of Mrs. Henry Wyche, Brunswick Countly, Virginia, proved in 1647 and names daughters, Rebecca Lucas and Elizabeth Lucas; grandchildren of William Lucas (son of Samuel and Rebecca Lucas); son-in-law, William Lucas. Her children: 13. Rebecca, married Samuel Lucas; 14. Elizabeth, married William Lucas.

5V161 and 7T112: Thomas Lucas, member of the House of Burgesses from Lancaster County, 1657-58.

4W(1)168: William, son of Walter Lucas, baptized 26 May, 1660, Martins Brandon Parish, Charles City County, Virginia.

11W(1)86: William Lucas, Foot Militia, Surry County, Virginia, Xber 19, 1687.

29V23: William Lucas shown in Quit Rent Rolls, Surry County, 1704, 315 acres.

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Book 2, page 69: Will, Mary Lucas, legal son John, son William, Executor. Died December 31, 1729. Recorded May 27, 1734.

20V202: Frances Lucas and William Spraggins married 20 July, 1769, Halifax County, North Carolina. Consent of James Lucas, father of Frances. Witness: William Lucas. (Marriage bonds of North Carolina.)

12W(1)16: Rebecca, daughter of William Lucas, deceased, and Chappell Gee married 18 March, 1773, Sussex County, Virginia.

26V191: Marriage of William Lucas and Ann Burbridge, 1774, in Orange County, Virginia. Deed Book, No. 17.

Lucases in North Carolina:

CRNC 6/47, 48-50: June 10, 1759, Petition to appoint "William Lucas of the Temple, Esq." deputy auditor in office of "Auditor General of His Majesties Revenues in America."

CRNC 6/48: 19 June, 1759, William Lucas appointed as above.

CRNC6/48: Letter of deputation from the Auditor to "William Lucas of the Temple, Esq." 20 June, 1757. Approved October 25, 1760.

CRNC 6/600: William Lucas, September, 1757, answers a complaint against him by Governor Dobbs.

CRNC 6/22, 47-48, 321, 600-605, 625: William Lucas twice attests the signature of the Earl of Granville who was then the Lord Protector of the Province of North Carolina.

CRNC 6/625: Representation to His Majesty proposing that William Lucas, Esq., be appointed Attorney General of the Province of North Carolina, 17 March, 1761.

CRNC 6/290: Above recommendation declined by Governor Dobbs. No date given.

CRNC 8/80: William Lucas signs petition 9 October, 1769, "Petition of Remonstrance from Anson County which requests that Benjamin Franklin or some other patriot be appointed to represent the unhappy state of this province to His Majesty."

NCH&GR 1/198: John Lucas, Executor of will of Thomas Bladen Davis, October 2, 1761–June 4, 1764. Doubtless Granville County. Here we see another Lucas in North Carolina.

CRNC 22/74: William Lucas, Revolutionary War pensioner from North Carolina.

17W(1)228: Mechlenburg County, North Carolina, will of William Lucas, June 23, 1778. Proved September 14, 1778. Wife, Ann; cousin, William Lucas. I doubt if this William Lucas who made his will is the one with whom we are concerned—possibly his cousin, above—as I have letter referring to the settlement of the estate of William Lucas in North Carolina, circa 1795.

CRNC 8/313: William Lucas exempt from paying taxes, December 11, 1770.

From the above we may see that William Lucas was a man of much prominence in North Carolina.

As migration in the colonies was from east to west, it seems probable that the Lucases moved from Surry County, Virginia, to Sussex and on to Brunswick. In 1704 Surry County, Virginia, included Sussex and part of Brunswick to the west. Brunswick County, Virginia, is adjacent to Halifax and Warren Counties, North Carolina, and it is probable that the Lucases moved from the Virginia counties into the North Carolina counties.

While I do not state as a fact, it is my belief that the James Lucas who gave his consent to the marriage of his daughter, Frances, to William Spraggins in Halifax County, North Carolina, in 1769, was the father of William Lucas who was a witness to the marriage and that William was a brother of Frances Lucas.

William Lucas and his wife, Ann Burbridge Lucas, had a daughter, Ann Lucas (born November 14, 1774, and died November 10, 1836), who married John⁵ Pope on February 21, 1798. (See Pope Family.)

Line of Descent:

William¹ Lucas married Ann Burbridge and had Ann² Lucas who married John⁵ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

McKINNE FAMILY

27W(1)61: Michael McKinne (Mackquinney) is the first of his name in America of whom we know. His wife was Elizabeth whom he married in 1665.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina by Worth S. Ray, page 615: Michael McKinne came to Virginia prior to December 14, 1635. Michael and his wife, Elizabeth, were ancestors of a long line of descendants. Elizabeth, after Michael's death in 1686, married Thomas Reeves, or Rives, was, perhaps, Elizabeth Daniel and, possibly, a sister of John Daniel, who died in the Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in 1679, leaving a will. Michael McKinne's will in 1686 shows clearly that he had only two sons, John and Barnaby.

Marriages, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1628-1800, page 44: Thomas Reeves of North Carolina and Mrs. Elizabeth Mackquinney, Relict of Michael Mackquinney, 1701. (DK1, page 339.)

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1647-1800, Book 1, page 37: Michael Macquiney, of Western Branch, Planter, wife, Elizabeth, youngest son, Barnabie, eldest son, John. Died April 15, 1686. Wife, executrix. Recorded August 9, 1686. Jeremiah Exum was a witness.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 615: Michael McKinne's two sons were: 1. John—nothing further found about him. 2. Barnaby; married in 1703 the widow of William Murphy who was Mary Exum, daughter of Jeremiah and Ann Lawrence Exum. (Mary Exum did not marry William Murphy, but her daughter, Ann, married William Murphy. 27W(1)61, SHAP 7/309 and Will of Ann Exum, Isle of Wight Will Book, No. 3, page 19, all say that Mary Exum first married Jacob Ricks.) They moved to Bertie

County, then Edgecombe County and later to Halifax County, North Carolina, where he became very wealthy and prominent. Their children were: a. Barnaby, Jr.; died 1736; b. William; died 1739; c. John; died 1753; d. Richard; died 1755; e. Robert; died 1755; f. Anne; married William Murphy, Jr.; g. Mourning; married John³ Pope; h. Patience; married Joseph Lane; i. Sarah; married Isaac Ricks; j. Christian; married William Hurst; k. Mary; married John Browne.

NCH&GR 1/470: It appears that John Pope and Isaac Ricks married sisters of Patience (McKinne) Lane. Patience married Joseph Lane (born 1710). Patience was the daughter of Barnaby McKinne, Sr.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 615: William Scott married Mourning Exum, daughter of Jeremiah Exum and his wife, Ann Lawrence, parents of the wife of Barnaby McKinne.

SHAP 6/508 and 27W(1)61: Barnaby and Mary Exum McKinne had: a. Barnaby; died 1736; b. William; died 1739; c. John; died 1753; d. Richard; died 1755; e. Robert; died 1755; f. Ann; married William Murphy; g. Mourning, married John Pope. (Four children are left out of this authority, but the data on the others agree in both instances.)

Barnaby, called Colonel, was born in the Isle of Wight County, Virginia, and died in Halifax County, North Carolina, in 1740. His wife was Mary Exum (no record of her birth and death), daughter of Judge Jeremiah and Ann Exum. (See Exum Family.) Ann Exum was the daughter of John Lawrence. (See Lawrence Family.)

Mary Exum McKinne married, first, Jacob Ricks (see Ricks Family) and was a widow when she married Barnaby McKinne.

27V59 and SHAP 6/209-210: Michael McKinne and wife Elizabeth had two sons: a. John; b. Barnaby, who married Mary, daughter of Jeremiah and Ann Exum who had first married Jacob Ricks.

Virginia County Records, Vol. 7, page 75: Land grants in Isle of Wight County, Virginia; Barnaby McKinne, 1714,

490 acres; 1714, 670 acres. Page 76: 1714, 545 acres; 1719, 3,435 acres.

27V59: "Barnaby McKinne, gentleman, and Mary, his wife," executed 55 deeds of land in Virginia and moved to North Carolina. His will was dated August 13, 1737. (Also in CRNC 5/1026.) A codicil dated December 3, 1739, is also of record at Halifax, North Carolina.

NCH&GR 2/149: Barnaby McKinne, Justice of the Peace, Albemarle County, North Carolina, July, 1722.

CRNC 2/473, 526, 570: Barnaby McKinne, Commissioner of the Peace, Bertie Precinct, April 19, 1724, and October 31, 1724.

NCH&GR 2/298 and 3/28: Barnaby McKinne, Justice of the General Court for the Province of North Carolina which lies east of Cape Fear, 1725.

NCH&GR 3/284, 290, and CRNC 2/572: Barnaby McKinne, Judge of the General Court, 1725.

6T166, 3V166, CRNC 25/210: In 1727 Maj. Barnaby McKinne was elected Vestryman of the Northwest Parish of Bertie County, North Carolina.

NCH&GR 3/236: Barnaby McKinne, one of the Associate Justices of the Peace.

NCH&GR 1/467: Barnaby McKinne in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, 1736.

CRNC 4/346: Barnaby McKinne, Justice of the Peace, Edgecombe County, March 6, 1739.

27V59, 60, 61: Additional authority for offices held by Barnaby McKinne.

25W(1)208 and 24W(1)45: Barnaby McKinne petitioned the Virginia Assembly in 1702 for permission to build a grist mill on Black Creek in what was then Isle of Wight County, afterwards Southampton County. He afterwards moved to Edgecombe County, North Carolina, where he made his will in 1737. His daughter, Mourning, married John³ Pope. This John Pope had a son, Henry, who lived in Halifax County, North Carolina, and his will was dated January 2, 1764, proved at April Court, 1764. Names wife and children.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 243: Barnaby McKinne was the son of Michael McKinne, who made his will in 1686. Barnaby moved to North Carolina and was Justice of the Peace in Bertie County in 1724, a judge of the General Court of North Carolina in 1725 and a member of the General Assembly from Edgecombe County in 1735.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 68: Bar Macquinney, Representative in Assembly from Edgecombe, 1734.

CRNC 2/115: Barnaby McKinne, member of the General Assembly from Edgecombe County, 1735.

3V166: Patience McKinne, daughter of Barnaby McKinne and Mary Exum, his wife, born about 1715. Her estate, from her father who died in 1759 (No! he died in 1740), was given her November 18, 1760.

CRNC 6/383, 384: Barnaby McKinne, late of Edgecombe County grandfather (Son?) to Barnaby McKinne, petitions the House on 7 May, 1760, reference land in Halifax County. Barnaby's will dated 13 August, 1737. Same reference land in Halifax County for Mourning Pope. It seems that Barnaby McKinne had sons, Richard (died May, 1755), and John, latter father of Patience Lane, wife of Joseph Lane of South Carolina. Petition asked that land be divided between Patience and Mourning Pope.

Same, 6/481: Repeats the above but gives the date as November 18, 1760, and CRNC 25/465 gives essence of above but says that petitioner was grandson of Barnaby² McKinne.

It will be noted that there are errors in this paragraph. Barnaby McKinne, Sr., was father of Patience Lane and not his son, John.

3T166: Patience, daughter of Barnaby McKinne, was born 1715, married 1730, Halifax, North Carolina.

24W(1)45: A deed dated February 22, 1775, recorded in Book No. 13, page 247, Halifax County, North Carolina, gives the following: Col. Barnaby McKinne, late of Edgecombe County, Province of North Carolina, deceased, died seized of certain lands in Halifax County, formerly Edge-

combe County. His will dated August 30, 1777, gave this land to his daughter, Mourning, in fee tail. His daughter intermarried with John Pope and had issue, Henry, dead, said land descended to Burwell Pope in fee tail. (A footnote to the above says that the dates are evidently a mistake.)

North and South Carolina Marriage Bonds by Clemons, page vii: Joseph Lane married, 1730, Patience, daughter of Barnaby McKinne, Sr.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 207: Will of Joseph Lane, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, December 6, 1757, November Court, 1758. Among legatees were Winifred Pope.

Same, page 233: Will, Barnaby McKinne, Edgecombe County, October 13, 1736, November Court, 1736. Daughters, Patience and Mary. Other legatees: Barnaby, son of Joseph Lane; Joseph Lane; William McKinne; John Pope.

Same, page 233: Will of John McKinne, Edgecombe County, February 28, 1753, May Court, 1753. Son, Barnaby. Daughters, Mary, Martha, Patience, Angelina Parish. Wife and Executrix, Mary.

Same, page 233: Mary McKinne, October 13, 1754, November Court, 1754. Executor, Barnaby Pope. Sons: John and Barnaby. Daughters: Annjeleany Pope, Mary, Patience, Martha. (Evidently widow of John McKinne, just above.)

I have been unable to find any record of the dates of birth and death of Mourning³ McKinne who married John² Pope. One authority mentions her son Henry as being her heir; another says she died between 1741 and 1755. The above petitions imply that she was living in 1760 when the division of land was made. She is mentioned many times in various books but none of the dates were found. It is probable that she was born circa 1700 and that she married John³ Pope in 1721 and that she died circa 1760. These dates are approximate only and are entered, tentatively, in the Pope Line.

Line of Descent:

Michael¹ McKinne married Elizabeth and had

Barnaby² McKinne who married Mary³ Exum and had Mourning³ McKinne who married John³ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

NORWOOD FAMILY

"Happy Valley" by Prof. Thomas Felix Hickerson, pages 54-55: The name Norwood is derived from an ancient manor called Nortwood (variously written Northwode and Norwode in old documents).

John Norwood of Kent appears to have been the first emigrant of the line from England to Virginia, coming about 1621 as headright or homesteader for Sir Francis Wyatt (1575-1642), Governor of Virginia during the periods 1621-26 and 1639-42.

5W(1)49: John Norwood appointed Sheriff of Virginia, 1650, by Governor Wyatt.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 79, and 5W(1)49: John Norwood, Sheriff of Anne Arundel County, Maryland, 1662. The former says John Norwood, a nephew of Edward Bennett's wife, moved from the Lower Norfolk to Anne Arundel County, Maryland.

5V228: Under the Early Relations Between Maryland and Virginia, 10 August, 1648, John Norwood ordered to render an account of the Glebe lands (Virginia).

2N83: At a Court in the Church in Lower Norfolk County held 15 August, 1649, "... John Norwood ... were presented to ye board by the High Sheriff as Seditious Sectuaries for not repairing to their parish Church and for refusing to heare Common prayer, etc." This repeated on page 84, same book.

2N85: Court held 1 October, 1649, ... John Norwood ... appeared and put under bond to appear "Att James Citty, the 8th day of this octob Court to answer ..." See above.

"Happy Valley," etc.: A family connection between the Wyatts and the Norwoods occurred when Adam Wyatt, remote ancestor of Sir Francis Wyatt, married the daughter of Wiggin de Norwood (see 3V180).

The aforesaid John Norwood was probably the father of William and Thomas Norwood of Surry County, Virginia, who were grown men in 1656. This William Norwood married Lydia (probably Lydia Jordan). In William's will he mentions seven children, one of whom was George.

In 1728, George Norwood deeded land describing himself as of Southwark Parish, Surry County, Virginia. In 1731/32 he made deeds in Surry County, describing himself as from Surry County, Virginia, and from Bertie Precinct, Colony of North Carolina. He died in Northampton County, North Carolina, originally part of Bertie. In his will, 1749 (Grimes Abstract of Wills, 1690-1760, North Carolina, page 271), George mentions his sons: William, Nathaniel, Samuel and Thomas. He left 160 acres of land to his grandson, John, son of William and other property to the children of Nathaniel.

NCH&GR 1/357: Will of George Norwood, Northampton County, North Carolina, April 21, 1749, August Court, 1749. Sons, Samuel and William; grandson, John, son of William Norwood; grandson, George Norwood; grandson, Nathaniel, son of Nathaniel Norwood; Elizabeth; Mary and Sarah, daughters of son, Nathaniel. Sons, Nathaniel and Samuel, Executors.

Grimes Abstract of Wills, 1690-1760, page 271, *and* NCH&GR 1/357: Will of Thomas Norwood, Craven County, North Carolina, December 26, 1757, March 24, 1758, Son, William, 1 shilling; Wife, Francis, Executrix and sole legatee.

"Happy Valley," etc.: William Norwood, born about 1700, son of George Norwood, entered 600 acres of land in Bertie, or Northampton, County in 1742. He moved to Granville County, North Carolina, as a paper is on file showing that he was one of several appointed to lay off Warren County when it was formed from old Bute County in 1779. William Norwood married Mary Wall, daughter of John Wall of Brunswick County, Virginia. (This John Wall, died 1761, is mentioned often in St. Andres' Church Records. He was a Member of the House of Burgesses. See Wall Family.)

NCH&GR 1/447: Under Miscellaneous Items of Chowan County, North Carolina, William Norwood, 300 acres of land in Granville County, North Carolina.

NCH&GR 1/357: Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1700, Will, William Norwood, December 30, 1747, November 14, 1748, sister, Mary Lane; brother, Thomas, nephew, John Norwood.

"Happy Valley," etc.: Among the children of William and his wife, Mary (Wall) Norwood, was John Wall Norwood (1727-1802) who lived in Northampton, Halifax, Granville and finally Franklin County, North Carolina, where he owned much land and a large house; and in his will, probated 1802, he leaves his home to his second wife, Leah, and youngest son, John Hall Norwood, during their lifetime.

"Happy Valley," page 159, Table 5: John Wall Norwood was a schoolmaster by profession. He had an academy in Franklin (then Bute) County. He owned a large plantation, well stocked, and had many slaves. He was appointed lay reader by the Bishop of London and officiated in three churches; was secretary of the first Diocesan Convention that met in North Carolina after the Revolutionary War; was an ardent patriot, and both he and his wife contributed in every way to the support and welfare of the soldiers; and he served as a member of the Committee of Safety for Halifax County.

John Wall Norwood (1727-1802) married, first, in 1755, a widow, Mrs. Lydia Ledbetter (1732-1764), and second, in 1765, Mrs. Leah Lenoir Whitaker (1737-1831). Children of this second marriage to Leah Lenoir were: William, Thomas (born circa 1768; died unmarried), Elizabeth, Leah, Winifred, Washington, Mary, John (born circa 1781). Leah was born in 1772 and married, first, William Gant (born 17 July, 1773; died 2 December, 1816), and after the death of her husband married, second, a Mr. Webster. The writer has a letter from Mrs. Webster to her daughter, Lesey Jane (Gant) Pope. (See Gant Family.)

William Gant and Leah Lenoir were married 16 June, 1804.

Lesey Jane Gant (born November 4, 1807; died December 31, 1866) married William Rouse Pope. (See Pope Family.)

John Wall Norwood rendered distinguished public service to his country and some of them are listed herewith:

CRNC 22/ 2, 371: Member, Granville County Regiment, 1754.

CRNC 24/228, 229: On Commission to divide Bute County.

CRNC 10/215: Member, Safety Committee, Halifax County, North Carolina, 1775.

CRNC 16/1126 and 17/235: Member, Tenth Regiment, North Carolina line, 1778, and member Lieutenant Colonel Davidson's company, 1779.

CRNC 13/913 and 19/385: Representative from Franklin County in North Carolina House of Commons, 1779-80.

CRNC 19/588: Justice of the Peace, Franklin County, North Carolina, 1784.

CRNC 22/2, 5, 25, 28, 30, 31: Member, North Carolina Convention from Franklin County at Hillsboro, 1788.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Norwood had

William² Norwood who married Lydia Jordan and had George³ Norwood who had

William⁴ Norwood who married Mary³ Wall and had John Wall⁵ Norwood who married Leah² Lenoir and had Leah⁶ Norwood who married William³ Gant and had

Lesey Jane⁴ Gant who married William Rouse⁶ Pope. (See Pope Line.)

RICKS FAMILY

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 242: Isaac¹ Ricks had Isaac² (1669-1748) who married Sarah McKinne, daughter of Barnaby McKinne (see McKinne Family) and had Jacob Ricks who married Mary Exum (see Exum Family).

NCH&GR 1/379: Abstract of Wills, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, Isaac² Ricks, March 11, 1748–October 28, 1748. Wife, Sarah.

SHAP 7/309-310: Jacob Rickesis, son of Isaac Rickesis, and Mary Exum, daughter of Jeremiah Exum, both of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, married in Chuckatuck, "14 day of 10 mo. 1699." Some of the witnesses were Isaac Rickesis, John Rickesis, Abraham Rickesis, Richard Exum, Mary Lawrence, Joane Lawrence, Elizabeth Lawrence.

Isle of Wight County, page 242: Isaac¹ Ricks died January 2, 1723, in his eighty-fifth year. His wife, Kathereen, born 1638, died October, 1717. Isaac² Ricks born 17 June, 1669, died in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, in 1748, where he made his will. He married Sarah, daughter of Barnaby McKinne and his wife, Mary, daughter of Jeremiah Exum.

SHAP 7/209: Early Quaker Records in Virginia: William Rickesis, son of Isaac Rickesis, died the 22nd day, sixth month, 1694, he being 24 years of age. "Jacob Rickesis, son of Isaac and Katheren, his wife, departed this life upon the — day of the fifth mo about the first hour in the Afternoon." The year is not given but the entry immediately above this one gives another death in 1700. Since Barnaby McKinne, Sr., and Mary Exum, who first married Jacob Ricks, were married in 1703, it is logical to assume that Jacob Ricks died circa 1700.

SHAP 6/413: "Early Quaker Records in Virginia": Isaac Ricks and Kathren Ricks were also witnesses to the marriage of William² Pope and Mary Haile, 11 February, 1708. (See Pope Family.)

SHAP 6/414: Jeremiah Exum, Isaac Ricks, Robert Lawrence, Elizabeth Lawrence, Anne Exum were witnesses to a marriage 15 November, 1707.

These entries tend to confirm the close relationship between the Exums and the Lawrences as mentioned by other authorities.

All the above-mentioned were Quakers, as were the early Popes. At least William¹ Pope and his children were. (See William¹ Pope above.)

The Ricks Family were no blood relationship to the Popes but this page is written to substantiate the relationship between the Ricks, the Exums and the McKinnes.

WALL FAMILY

33V183: Joseph Wall owned 150 acres of land in Surry County, Virginia, in 1704. His will proved in that county 19 April, 1727, legatees: Wife (name not given); Sons, James, John, Joseph, Richard and Robert; Daughter, Elizabeth. Son, John, Executor.

Records of Brunswick County, Virginia: John Wall, appraisement (of his estate) November 28, 1758. He married Mary. Her will, dated February 3, 1762, was proved March 28, 1763. Among her legatees was Mary Wall. John Cooke, Executor. (This Mary Wall married William Norwood. (See Norwood Family.)

33V175 and Virginia Council Journals, 1726-1753: At a Council held on the 13th of June, 1728, John Wall of Brunswick County, Virginia, was against a patent to Thomas Tomlinson of Surry County for 430 acres of land lying on the north side of Cat Tail Creek in Brunswick County.

1C210: John Wall of Brunswick County, "Sundry Caveats," February 7-27, 1727.

33V183 and 4R135: John Wall was a member of the House of Burgesses from Brunswick County, August, 1736; November, 1738; May, 1740; May, 1742; September, 1744; February, 1745; July, 1746; March, 1747. See Journal, House of Burgesses, Vol. 1727-40, pages IX, 284, 294, 335, 342, 357, 376, and Vol. 1742-1749, pages vii, 5, 60, 80, 112, 129, 157, 194, 195, 201.

Line of Descent:

Joseph¹ Wall had

John² Wall who married Mary and had

Mary³ Wall who married William⁴ Norwood and had

John⁵ Wall Norwood who married Leah² Lenoir and had

Leah⁶ Norwood who married William³ Gant and had

Lesey Jane⁴ Gant who married William Rouse⁶ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

WATTS FAMILY

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 671: Henry Watts granted 157 acres in Isle of Wight County, October 18, 1643.

Marriages, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1628-1800, page 53: John Watts and Alice English, daughter of John English, 1678, W&D Book 2, page 166.

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Marriage Bonds, page 53: John Watts and Alice English, daughter of John English, 1678. W&D Book 2, page 166.

CRNC 1/523: April, 1669, Perquimons Precinct, "John Watts Proves Writs for 3 psons transported Into this Country Whoses Names ar under Wretten John Watts Sr John Watts Juner Catterin Watts."

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, Marriage Bonds, page 42: Henry Pope and Sarah Watts, daughter of John Watts, 1697, W&D Book 2, page 286. (Note: This date, 1697, is an error as other authorities give the year as 1684.)

CRNC 1/480: Perquimans Precinct, Court, 2nd Monday in January, 1696-97, John Watts presents petition.

7V256: Will of Robert Pitt, of Newport, Isle of Wight County, 10 July, 1711, leaves "10 pds Sterling to Sarah Watts, daughter of John Watts."

Seventeenth Century, etc., page 617: John Watts on Jury duty, 11 September, 1694.

Virginia County Records, 7/77: John Watts granted 65 acres of land in Isle of Wight County, 1715.

NCH&GR 3/402: Under "Births, Marriages, Deaths," in Berkeley (later Perquiman's Precinct), John Watts, formerly of Accomac County, Virginia, died in North Carolina, November 17, 1696, at Caleb Callaway's house at "9 O'clk at nite."

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, 1647-1800, Book 1, page 54: John Watts, legal son John, daughter, Sarah Pope (married Henry² Pope, 1684). Executors, Son, John, and son-in-law, Henry Pope. Died January 20, 1697-98. Recorded February 9, 1697-98.

Isle of Wight Book, 1661-1719, page 386: John Watts made his will 20th of January, 1697-98, and it was proved in open court in Isle of Wight County, 9th of February, 1697-98. In his will he mentions his son, John Wats, and his daughter, "I doe give to my daughter, Sarah Pope, my little table, a warming pan, a little brass kettle, six earthen plates and an Earthen porringer." "I doe ordayne my sonne John Watts and my son-in-law Henry Pope be whole and sole Exers."

Line of Descent:

Henry¹ Watts had

John² Watts who married Alice² English and had

Sarah³ Watts who married Henry² Pope. (See Pope Line.)

CARTER AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ALLIED FAMILIES: ALSTON, BROWN, BRUNSON, CLAIBORNE, CLARK, COLEMAN, CONYERS, CRAWFORD, DALE, DANIEL, DAWSON, EPPERSON, GILBERT, HARRIS, HARRISON, HOLLAND, KEARNEY, KINCHEN, LINDSAY, McINTOSH, OVERTON, PALIN, PANNIL, PEARCY, RIVERS, RODES, RUFFIN, SKIPWITH, THATCHER, THOMAS, WATKINS, WILLIAMSON.

THE NAME AND FAMILY OF CARTER

Media Research Bureau, Washington, D. C.: The surname CARTER is classified by etymologists as a name derived from occupation, rather than one of place, characteristics or invention. In Gaelic it is found CAIRTEAR, meaning tourist or sojourner. In England it is supposed to have been derived from the trade of a cart driver or that of an agent traveling by cart. The Anglo-Saxon word CRAET described a wain or chariot, and far back in Roman times the Latin word Carrus stood for chariot or car.

Probably the earliest written appearance of the name in its present form is found in the famous Hundred Rolls, in use as county records from the thirteenth to the fifteenth centuries. The name Nicholes de Carter is there recorded in a legal capacity.

It is known that as early as the fourteenth century in England the name Carter appears among the country gentry. Family historians find evidence indicating that two separate Carter families were founded and developed in different parts of the country. The family located north of London was originally to be found in Bedford and Hertfordshire. The other family group, located more to the south, had its original center in and around Kent.

That the Carters of England were, in general, people of standing and position cannot be doubted. From early times they were entitled to Heraldic insignia. Various coats-of-arms have been granted to different branches of the Carter Family. Many of them possessed extensive tracts of land in Great Britain, and many others, often the younger sons of the family, sought out the larger cities in which to establish and carry on mercantile enterprises and engage in the professions.

Early in the history of the Colonies, Carters emigrated to both Massachusetts and Virginia. In Virginia there were five outstanding bearers of the name from whom many distinguished descendants have sprung. One of these five was Captain Thomas Carter, probably of Nansemond County (he was actually of Lancaster County).

Colonel John Carter, a distinguished English Royalist, whose ancestral home was believed to have been in Buckinghamshire, England, sought refuge in Virginia about 1649.

Since the beginning of the American Government under the Constitution, nine Carters have served as members of Congress—eight in the House of Representatives and one in both the House and the Senate.

Christian names commonly used by the Carters throughout their history are: Thomas, Elizabeth, Hannah, James, Sarah, Robert and William (1937).

18T237-239 and Institute of American Genealogy, Vol. 253, page 236: "There are various people of the name of CARTER. Any city directory will furnish an ample list. The name has its inception in the occupation of a 'carter.' There are two separate and distinct races of Carter in Virginia that began in old Lancaster County. Both have furnished Colonial officials and each has rendered distinguished military service to all our wars."

"Descendants of Captain Thomas Carter" by Dr. Joseph Lyon Miller of Thomas, West Virginia, 1912:

"The name Carter is given among fifty surnames most commonly found in England, and is of quite ancient respectability, as it occurs among the country gentry in the Fourteenth Century. From early times there seems to have been two separate Carter families in England. The arms used by Colonel John Carter of 'Corotoman' and by Captain Thomas Carter of 'Barford,' Virginia, indicate that both belonged to the Carters north of London, though not of the same family.

"The circumstantial evidence from the crest of the seal, the name of his home, 'Barford,' and the striking similarity of the baptismal names of his children and their descendants makes it appear strongly probable that he was more or less closely connected with the ancient Carter family of 'KIMPSON' of Bedfordshire. I am of the opinion (Miller) that he was the son of one of the sons of William Carter, Gent., of 'Kimpson,' Bedfordshire (buried December 1, 1605), and his wife, Mary Ancell (buried March 1, 1619), daughter

of Thomas Ancell, Esq., of Barford in County Bedford. They had seven sons and ten daughters—the twelfth child being Ancell Carter.

“Though the ancestry of Captain Thomas Carter is not actually known, as is likewise the case of Colonel John Carter of ‘Corotoman,’ and a number of other emigrants coming to Virginia, there is plenty of evidence to show that he came of a good family, whose claim to gentility was unquestioned. He lived in an age when Man’s pretensions to social considerations must bear thorough investigation before being allowed, and Captain Carter seems to have stood the test. Captain Carter was a captain in the Lancaster militia. It is also believed that he was a burgess in 1667 and probably subsequently. During the ‘Long Assembly,’ March 23, 1661, to March 7, 1676, during which there was no election, there was a Captain Carter who was a Burgess in 1667 and a member of one of the committees. At that time, there seem to have been no other Carters of any prominence in Virginia, outside of those in Lancaster County. He was probably among the Vestrymen and Church Wardens of Christ Church. The old Vestry book beginning in 1739 for the combined parishes of Christ Church and St. Mary’s White Chapel gives the names of two sons of Captain Carter surviving at that time, and two of his grandsons among the Vestrymen and Church Wardens, and a grandson and a great-grandson were clerks of the Vestry for a number of years.”

Journal, House of Burgesses, Virginia, 1659-60-1693, page 47: “Colonel Edward Carter present at session of September 26, 1667,” and page 49: “Captain Carter present at the session of October 2, 1667.”

18T238: Lists offices held by Capt. Thomas Carter but gives no dates.

17C&IofWCo., page 357: The Carters landed in the Northern Neck of Virginia in 1650. This could easily—and probably did—include Capt. Thomas Carter who was born in 1630/31 and who probably landed in the Northern Neck at about the age of twenty years and settled in Lancaster County where he became so prominent.

18T237-239: This authority gives a chart signed by Thomas¹ Carter who married Katherine Dale. This chart says he was the eldest son of William Carter in Barford (in England) who married Ann, daughter of Thomas Emery of Aldridgeday and Earsley in County Barford, and who was the son of Thomas Carter of Kempson in County Barford, who was living in 1634 and who married Jane, third daughter of John Bellay, Doctor of Civil Law and Chancellor of the Diocese of Lincoln. He was the son of William Carter, Gent., of Kempson in County Barford (Ao 27, Elizabeth), who married Mary, daughter of Thomas Ancell of Barford, Esq. This William Carter was the son of William Carter of Kempson in County Barford who married Elizabeth, sister and sole heir of William Cranfeild of County Barford (Ao 13, Elizabeth). William Cranfeild, Sr. (Ao 13, H8) who made his will (Ao 27, H8) who married Katherine (Ao Hen. 8).

(Note: This then goes back four generations beyond Capt. Thomas Carter.)

Capt. Thomas¹ Carter, whose name is on this chart, was a captain of militia, Member of the House of Burgesses, County Justice, Vestryman, etc., in Lancaster County, Virginia. He named his seat "Barford" after the parish in which the village of Kempson is situated. He married Katherine, daughter of Edward Dale, Clerk of the Court, who, in turn, married Diana Skipwith, daughter of Sir Henry Skipwith, the first baronet of his line.

8W(1)35-36: There was a Thomas Carter of Lancaster, a contemporary of Colonel John Carter, father of Robert (King) Carter. He was a Justice of the Peace in 1663, and, it is said, in a deed dated December 6, 1674, that he married Katherine Dale, daughter of Major Edward Dale (clerk of the county in 1655 and justice of the peace in 1675) and of Diana (Skipwith) his wife.

The will of Thomas Carter, Sr., proved November 14, 1700, named sons: Thomas, Edward, John, James, Henry, "now in England."

"Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter" (see above):
The first CARTER ancestor in America of whom positive

record is found is Capt. Thomas Carter of "Barford," Christ Church Parish, Lancaster County, Virginia. The tradition preserved by a branch of the family in Lancaster County and recorded in 1858 says that he was the son of a London merchant of good family. He may have been the youngest son of Ancell Carter, born October 28, 1591, son of William and Mary Carter of Kimpson who settled in London. Ancell Carter, Grocer, of London, had six sons, and Thomas is mentioned as the youngest. He was born in 1630/31. Thomas Carter first appears in Nansemond County and later in Lancaster County. (In view of the chart mentioned above, this ancestry is probably wrong.)

Thomas Carter, Sr., and Katherine Dale, eldest daughter of Edward Dale, all of Lancaster County, were married 4th May, 1670. They had ten sons and three daughters. The second son, Thomas Carter, Jr., was born June 4, 1672.

Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr., died October 22, 1700 (aged about 70 years).

Katherine Dale Carter, his wife, died May 10, 1703, in her fifty-first year.

Thomas Carter, Jr., probated his father's will on November 14, 1700. (This is also in 17W(2)277.)

17W(2)276: Capt. Thomas Carter purchased his first land in Lancaster County from Colonel John Carter as of June 1, 1654.

17W(2)277: October 21, 1663: "According to order the oath of a Commissioner was this day Administered to Capt. Thomas Carter after which he sat in the Court." Until November 8, 1665, he appeared at every meeting of the Court.

17W(1)196: March 6, 1670, Major Dale's son-in-law, Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr., was commissioned Deputy Clerk, Lancaster County. In Colonial days the clerk was probably the most important office after the county lieutenant, and besides belonging to the local gentry, was one of the leading men of the county.

17W(1)199: Katherine Dale married Capt. Thomas Carter prior to 1674. (See Dale Family.)

17W(2)277: "At the request of Mr. Edward Dale, Mr. Tho. Carter is Deputed Clerke for said Dale."

For forty years he appears frequently as jurymen, appraiser, etc. Captain Carter married Katherine Dale, daughter of Major Edward Dale and Diana Skipwith Dale, prior to 1670 as their son, Henry, was born in 1674 and he was at least the third and probably the fourth of their children. Their children: 2. Edward; 3. Thomas, 4. John; 5 Henry, born 1674; 6. James; 7. Elizabeth; 8. Peter; 9. Katherine; 10. Joseph.

Journal, House of Burgesses (Virginia), 1659/60-1693, page 47: Colonel Edward Carter present at session of September 26, 1667. Page 49: Captain Carter present at session of October 2, 1667. Both were from Lancaster County.

Thomas² Carter, Jr., second son of Captain Thomas¹ Carter and Katherine Dale Carter, was born June 4, 1672, and died in September, 1728. After his mother's death he inherited "Barford," the Carter home on the Corotoman River where he died. He was engaged in business for many years with Robert ("King") Carter of Corotoman, and the latter speaks very highly of him in his will.

17W(2)279: Capt. Thomas Carter, Jr., like his father, was a captain in the Lancaster Militia, and from December 12, 1705, to May 14, 1709, he was continuously a member of the County Court.

"Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter" and 18W(1)235: Thomas Carter, Jr., and Arabella Williamson, daughter of William Williamson, son of James Williamson of Rappahannock County, Virginia, were married August 22, 1695.

Thomas Carter, Jr.'s, will mentions eight sons but no mention is made of daughters. His will was probated October 10, 1733.

17W(2)280: "Thomas Carter of the County of Lancaster, Gent., "made his will which was probated October 10, 1733. He left his entire estate to his wife, Arabella, during her widowhood.

"Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter": Daniel³ Carter, third son of Capt. Thomas Carter, Jr., and his wife, Arabella Williamson, was born in 1700 and died in 1759 in his native

county. His personal estate amounted to £343, 2s, 4d and included eight negroes, a sword, books and the usual furniture. His will was returned to the Lancaster Court on November 16, 1759. He owned a farm of 350 acres. He seems not to have held any official position in his county and parish and appears but three times in the county records. First, May 17, 1725, when he was attorney for his friend, Robert Briscoe, at court; second, in his father's will in 1728, when he received a negro woman and a share in the residuary estate; and, last, when his own estate was divided between his wife and seven of his nine children. The eldest son is supposed to have had his portion previously to his father's death, so he did not appear in the division. One son had a disagreement with his father, left home and was lost sight of before Daniel Carter died. This son was Robert Carter, who emigrated to Sumter County, Camden District, South Carolina, about 1752.

Daniel Carter married, about 1722-25, Elizabeth Pannil, daughter of William Pannil of Richmond County, Virginia. She was a widow when she married Daniel Carter, and she died at the age of 81 years.

Daniel and Elizabeth Carter had issue: a. William Pannil Carter; died in Prince William County in September, 1794; b. John Carter, supposed to have been killed by Indians in the western part of the state; c. Joseph Carter, said to have settled in one of the Carolinas; d. Thomas Carter, said to have settled in one of the Carolinas; e. Robert Carter (see later); f. Margaret Carter; married William Kent; g. Mary E. Carter; married a Mr. Kirk; h. Frances Carter, born 1738, died 1830, unmarried; i. Daniel Carter, born 1738; died October 1, 1794.

Elizabeth Pannil, wife of Daniel Carter, Sr., was the daughter of William Pannil and his wife, Frances, who was the daughter of Elizabeth Mills. Elizabeth was the daughter of William Mills, who lived in Rappahannock County, Virginia. Elizabeth Mills' husband's name is not known. (See Pannil Family.)

Robert⁴ Carter (Daniel,³ Captain Thomas,² Captain Thomas, Sr.¹), born August 12, 1733-36 (other authorities

are doubtful as to the year of his birth, one saying 1731, which is hardly probable as he was the fifth child, while another says that he was born between 1725 and 1738), died in South Carolina in 1792. He had a disagreement with his father about 1752 and emigrated to Sumter County, Camden District, South Carolina.

18W(1)242: Robert Carter was a member of the Provisional Congress at Charleston in 1775. He married Margaret, daughter of William Brunson, in 1754. (See Brunson Family.)

“Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter”: “Robert Carter had a quarrel with his father and left home before grandfather died and was never heard of again” (letter from a grandson of Daniel Carter).

Robert Carter, born between 1725 and 1738, who quarreled with his father and left home before his father died, may have been the Robert Carter who emigrated from Virginia (place unknown) to Sumter County, Camden District, South Carolina, about 1752 where he married, in 1754, Margaret Brunson, daughter of William Brunson.

18W(1)242: Robert⁴ Carter, born in Virginia circa 1733-36, settled in Sumter County, Camden District, South Carolina, about 1752 where he married Margaret Brunson, daughter of William Brunson, Sr.

Robert Carter was a member of the Provisional Congress at Charleston in 1775. He made his will December 28, 1791, and named the following children: a. James, born about 1755; b. Benjamin, born 1757; c. William, born 1759; d. Daniel, born November 27, 1761 (married Sarah Conyers—see Conyers Family); e. Margaret Alexander; f. Susan Story. Benjamin died unmarried. He was a captain in the South Carolina Line in the Revolutionary War, for which he received a grant of 5,000 acres of land in Williamson County, Tennessee. He was a member of the Society of the Cincinnati.

William married and left a son, John, who attained some distinction as a lawyer at Camden and later at Charleston and was a Member of Congress from South Carolina.

“Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter”: Robert Carter’s will was dated December 28, 1791, and he mentioned his children, as follows: a. James, born circa 1755; married and left two daughters; name of wife unknown. No further data. b. Benjamin, born circa 1757; died January 20, 1830. Lived in Camden District, South Carolina. Served in the Revolutionary Army as First Lieutenant, Fourth North Carolina Regiment, from November 22, 1776, and as Captain from January 11, 1779, until the close of the War. After the War he received a grant of 5,000 acres in Williamson County, Tennessee. He was a member of the Society of the Cincinnati. He was never married. c. William Carter, born circa 1759. Married but name of wife unknown. He left one son, John, and one daughter. John was educated by his bachelor uncle, Benjamin, and served in Congress, and died without issue so far as known. He married 12 February, 1829, Ellen Marbury, daughter of Capt. William Marbury. (From the Camden, South Carolina, newspaper files, issue of 21 February, 1829: “The Honorable John Carter, representative in Congress from this District, was married in Washington, the 12th instant, to Miss Ellen Marbury of Georgetown, D. C.”) d. Daniel⁵ Carter. (See later.) e. Margaret Alexander. f. Susan Story.

The children of Robert⁴ Carter, above, are named by Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter, son of Daniel⁵ Carter, and will be referred to later.

Reference “Bachelor Ben,” above, as he was referred to in the family, the following is of interest. From *Historic Camden* by Kirkland and Kennedy, page 359: “The Carter Family is one of the many once prominent in Camden now utterly vanished. Their early location was at Carter’s Crossing in old Salem County, now part of Lee County. A few facts concerning the family can now be recorded.

In 1784 Joseph Kershaw conveyed Lots 635 and 636 to Robert Carter of Salem. On Lot 635 still stands an old house, probably one of the oldest in Camden, where once lived Benjamin Carter, son of Robert Carter. It will only be added here concerning Benjamin, the old Revolutionary hero of whom a full sketch will be found at the end of

Chapter VII that he acquired wealth in the business of tanning products, fine leather and morocco. His vats were near the creek swamp at the terminus of York Street."

Same book, page 196: "Capt. Benjamin Carter (born 1756) for fifty years a resident of Camden, a gallant soldier of the Revolution, was at the battle of Camden. He had been at Brandywine, Germantown and Valley Forge. A native of Salem, Sumter District, he was a student at Charlotte, North Carolina, in 1776 and enlisted for the War there. He died in Camden, January 20, 1830, at the age of 74. Commanded his company on the extreme left of Gage's line. Buried in the Quaker Cemetery, Camden."

Daniel⁵ Carter (Robert,⁴ Daniel,³ Captain Thomas, Jr.,² Captain Thomas, Sr.¹) was probably named Daniel by his father, Robert Carter in honor of the latter's father, Daniel,³ and probably after hearing of the latter's death in Virginia in 1759. This Daniel⁵ was born November 27, 1761, and died July 22, 1844, in Tennessee. He married Sarah Conyers (see Conyers Family) in South Carolina on July 2, 1782. They moved to Tennessee and settled on part of the land granted to his brother, Benjamin. Daniel served six enlistments of three months each in the Revolutionary forces of South Carolina, the first being in November, 1778, when he was seventeen years of age. He entered the service again in January, 1781, as First Lieutenant in Colonel Wade Hampton's South Carolina Regiment and remained until the close of the War. Some of the major battles in which he participated include Hanging Rock, Camden, Ramsour's, Wahob, Forts Congaree and Mott, Orangeburg, Biggan's Church and Quinby. He also participated in many minor engagements. (Letter from the Bureau of Pensions dated April 3, 1929.)

South Carolina during the Revolutionary War, page 63: Daniel Carter shown on the pay roll of Capt. John Reid's troop of Light Dragoons, Commanded by Lieut. Col. Wade Hampton, General Sumter's Brigade. First Lieutenant April 15, 1781, for five months. "Pay and bounty in negroes," one grown, one small, and shows latter in "bal. due" column.

18W(1)242: Daniel Carter, born 1761, died in 1844, was a lieutenant of Cavalry in the Revolutionary War. He purchased a part of his brother's Tennessee land to which he removed about 1800. July 2, 1782, he married Sarah Conyers of South Carolina and had issue.

Goodspeed's History of Tennessee, page 774: "On Carter's Creek lived the Carters for whom the creek was named. Among them was Daniel Carter, a Revolutionary soldier and owner of 5,000 acres."

From this point on I take extracts from the undated manuscript history of the Carter Family written by Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter, son of Daniel⁵ Carter, in the first part of the Nineteenth Century and continued by Benjamin⁷ Franklin Carter in 1904. The original manuscript is in my possession.

"There are few persons but who desire to know something of the history of their ancestors. Yet there are but few who can trace back their ancestors to more than the second or third ancestry. And I myself am not able to tell you anything relative to my Great-grandfather or Mother. As far back as I can go is to make you slightly acquainted with my Grandfathers and Mothers, and I do hope that some of my children will continue this imperfect History which I have commenced, and not leave their offspring in the same state of ignorance relative to their ancestors which we find ourselves.

"My Grandfather's name on my father's side was Robert Carter and my Grandmother Margaret Brunson. My Grandfather on my Mother's side was named W. Conyers (his name was actually James Conyers—see Conyers Family) and Grandmother's name was McIntosh.

"My Grandfather Robert Carter moved from the State of Virginia to South Carolina previous to the Revolutionary War. It is said that he had no brothers, so the large family of Carters who resided in the State of Virginia cannot be very closely related to our family. They resided in Sumters District on the waters of the Black River. Each of my Grandfathers left a considerable offspring.

“My Grandfather Robert Carter had four sons, James, Benjamin, Daniel and William. Two daughters, Margaret Alexander and Susan Story.

“James left no sons, but he had two daughters.

“Benjamin was never married, but was a captain in the Regular Army and received a slight wound at the Battle of Brandywine. He died at an advanced age and left a handsome estate to be divided among his brothers and sisters' children, leaving about one-half to his nephew, John Carter, the only son of William Carter, whom he had educated and who was a member to Congress from Kershaw District. My Uncle Benjamin's residence was Camden, South Carolina. William Carter had one son and one daughter. Margaret Alexander had a large family. Susan Story had no children. My Father, Daniel Carter, married Sarah Conyers 2 July, 1782, and had a large family of children, viz.: James R. Carter, Margaret, Robert William, Daniel, Hariote, Benjamin, John Conyers, Isaac, Alexander, Milton, Mary Eliza, Agnes Caroline and Susannah Amelia (twins), Anderson.

“My Grandfather Conyers had three sons and three daughters, James, Daniel and Stran, my Mother, Sarah, Mrs. (Elizabeth) Anderson, who had a large and respectable family. The other daughter (Mary, who married Hugh Gamble—will of James Conyers of the High Hills and St. Mark Parish, South Carolina, 1783) was murdered by one of their slaves with several of her children.

“My Grandfather Carter and all of his sons were active Whigs during the Revolutionary War. My Father was a lieutenant in the Cavalry.

“My Grandfather Conyers was confined to his sick room during the War, but his sons, James and Daniel, were in the service as officers. James was at the fall of Savannah and died in the service shortly afterwards. He left two sons with whom the name of Conyers remain. Daniel died leaving several children. Stran had only one son and one daughter. The son died insane without marrying. The daughter had a considerable family. My Grandfather Conyers, although confined to his room during the War, ren-

dered his country important service by conveying information to General Marion and furnishing ammunition, for which he was paid by the enemy by burning his dwelling, carrying off his slaves and destroying his stock.

"My Father's family were long-life persons, but on my Mother's side they were short lived. She lived the longest of any of her family and died in her sixty-fourth year. The balance of her brothers and sisters died from thirty to fifty years of age.

"My Father lived to be 83 years of age and was pretty active at 75 years, though he had twice suffered very severely from rheumatism. My Father and Mother were both Presbyterians, and as far back as I can recollect, and they informed me that they had had most of their children baptized by a Presbyterian preacher by the name of Rev. W. Rees, that is, commencing with the oldest and ending with myself. The remainder were baptized by Rev. M. Stephens and some other Presbyterian preacher. My Father was long a Ruling Elder in that Church."

(Here an entry in the handwriting of Benjamin Franklin Carter: "Daniel Carter and Sarah Conyers were married July 2, 1782.")

"My Father, Daniel Carter, was born 27 Nov. 1761; died 22 July, 1844.

"My Mother, Sarah Conyers, was born 4 May, 1762; died the 25th January, 1826.

"Their children:

"James Rutherford Carter, born May 4, 1784; died 1 April, 1835.

"Margarete was born 5 November, 1785; died 10 February, 1826.

"Robert William, born 28 June, 1787; died —.

"Daniel Carter, born 11 November, 1788; died September 30, 1820.

"Sarah Hariote, born June 9, 1790; died 25 January, 1826.

"Benjamin Carter, born June 14, 1792; died July 16, 1865.

"John Conyers Carter, born December 10, 1793; died April 21, 1828.

"Isaac Carter, born July 15, 1795; died September 20, 1822.

"Alexander Carter, born 29 October, 1796; died 2 February, 1863.

"Milton Carter, born June 11, 1798; died 6 June, 1852.

"Mary Eliza, born 14 February, 1801; died March 28, 1874.

"Agnes Caroline, born 20 July, 1803; died 8 June, 1833.

"Susannah Amelia, born 20 July, 1803; died in infancy.

"Anderson Carter, born 30 April, 1806; died 13 March, 1861."

The above ends the manuscript history written by Dr. Benjamin Carter.

The following is extracted from the continuation of that history written by Benjamin Franklin Carter in 1904:

"The foregoing was written by my father, Dr. Benjamin Carter (son of Daniel and Sarah Conyers Carter), and continued by his only son, Benjamin Franklin Carter, in the seventy-sixth year of his age in 1904. My Grandfather Daniel Carter removed from South Carolina with a part of his family and settled on Carter's Creek in Maury County, Tennessee, on a 5,000 acre tract granted to his brother, Captain Benjamin, by the State of North Carolina for service in the Revolutionary War, said Creek bearing the name of the grantee. Captain Benjamin Carter came to Tennessee with Robert Campbell (afterwards a judge of the Supreme Court of Tennessee), who located a similar grant adjoining the Carter entry.

"When my Grandfather moved to Tennessee the means for education were very limited, but my father attended a school at Franklin taught by a noted educator named Blackman or Blackburn. At the same time James K. Polk (afterwards President Polk) was, as I have understood, a classmate of my father. Subsequent to leaving the school at Franklin my father read medicine and attended medical lectures at Baltimore where he always went by horseback. When he commenced to practice his profession he settled

at Elkton in Giles County, Tennessee, at that time the most important part of said county.

“My Grandfather Carter was one of the few Revolutionary soldiers I ever knew. I never saw my Grandmother Carter, who died two years before I was born. I well remember my Grandfather’s second wife—the widow Sarah McCabe. They were married June 18, 1833—were quite old when they married and had no children. After his second marriage my Grandfather lived and died near Franklin, Tennessee, on the Columbia Road. I remember being there at least twice with my mother and sisters, and once by myself, about 1842, when he sent me to Nashville to draw his pension as an officer of the Revolutionary War. The pension was paid to me in silver dollars which I carried in saddlebags. Silver dollars were scarce at that time and were seldom used as currency. The silver in circulation was chiefly of Spanish coinage in denominations of 6¼, 12½ and 25 cents. The circulation in general use was issued by State banks and many so-called ‘wildcat banks.’ The latter’s ‘promise to pay’ were seldom redeemed and disaster to the country was the natural result.

“I do not know that my grandfather held a higher rank than lieutenant of cavalry, though he was always called Captain. He was fond of relating incidents of the war, many of which are fresh in my memory. My father always spoke in highest terms of his mother who, from all I have heard, was a high type of our Colonial dames.

“Living at a time when the Colonies were solely harassed by unrelenting partisan warfare, she, like many of her sex, had daring adventures against the Tories—many of which are items of interest in American History. My Grandmother’s intelligence, influence and superior management of household affairs were prominent features of her character, but above all, her Christian example and precepts are treasured by her children as a sacred inheritance.

“The family of my grandparents Daniel and Sarah (Conyers) Carter are named on page — with dates of birth and death. Their first son, James Rutherford Carter, and Margaret, daughter of — and —, of South Carolina,

were married ——. They lived and died on their plantation in Maringo County, Alabama. Their children: Samuel Dwyer, born January 17, 1805; Hester Amelia, born February 1, 1809; James C., born ——, married Courtney Lane, daughter of —— of Giles County, Tennessee, then deceased. The said James C. came to Pulaski in early manhood, clerked in the general merchandise store of Carter and Nye, then for Martin and Carter with whom he afterwards held an interest, and lastly was junior member of the firm of B. and J. C. Carter. A few years after retiring from business he purchased a farm near Okalona, Mississippi, where he and his wife died survived by the following children: Daniel C. Carter, William A. Carter.

“First daughter: Margaret Carter—nothing further.

“Second son: Robert William Carter, born June 28, 1787, and married to ——; had a daughter named Sarah D. and a son named Francis B. (called Frank). The daughter married Duncan W. Murphey and had three children. The son, Dr. Frank Carter married —— and lived near his sister in Claiborn, Alabama, in 1846.

“Third son: Daniel Carter died when 32 years of age, it seems without marrying.

“Second daughter: Sarah Hariote Carter and John Roland were married March 15, 1807, and lived on part of a grant to Benjamin Carter in Maury County, Tennessee, where their children were born, as follows (omitted).

“Fourth son: Benjamin Carter in early manhood enlisted with the Tennessee volunteers as Adjutant Surgeon in the Creek War under command of General Jackson, but after a hard campaign of much suffering by the army, his health became impaired and, resigning his commission, he returned to Elkton. After leaving the medical school at Baltimore, he contemplated locating in New Orleans and had letters of introduction and endorsement to Maj. Gen. James Wilkinson, in command of the U. S. Army, to Judge Robert Livingston of the U. S. District Court, afterward Minister to France and, later, a member of President Jackson’s cabinet. My father, however, was persuaded to settle at Elkton and his letters, like others of the same tenor, were never

presented and are now in my possession. (I now have them—W. R. P.) After securing a good but laborious practice at Elkton, he married Elizabeth Kinchen Lindsay (born October 17, 1800; died March 8, 1873) on June 13, 1822.

“My eldest sister, Sarah Elizabeth Carter, was born in Elkton April 18, 1823, and my second sister, Castera Carter, was born there in 182—. My third sister, Mary Margaret Carter, and I (Benjamin Franklin Carter) in Pulaski; she on —, 1825 and I on September 26, 1828. My parents moved to Pulaski between the births of my second and third sisters when my father formed a partnership with Dr. William C. Topp in the practice of medicine. After retiring from active practice about 183— to — he began his mercantile career as mentioned before. I well remember, however, though quite young, the malignant cholera epidemic of 1833 in Pulaski and that my father remained at home attending the stricken after sending his family to my grandmother Lindsay in Maury County. The year 1833 was long designated as ‘the year the stars fell’—a meteoric phenomenon as alarming to many as its contemporary, the cholera.

“In 1828, the year of my birth, my father had his future residence built near the southern boundary of the junction of Madison and Jefferson Streets and there lived the remainder of his life. This building was destroyed by a tornado on the night of December 26, 1865, at the same time that several other buildings were demolished and injured in the western part of the town and when several persons were killed. Attached to the rear of my father’s residence was a one-story frame building not seriously impaired by the storm but, being vacant and isolated, it was chosen by the mysterious ‘Ku Klux Klan’ as a suitable place to organize and hold its meetings. This historic room still (1904) stands near its first location.

“The Ku Klux Klan was conceived in a spirit of levity by a few young men of Pulaski in 1867, having no ulterior purpose than to play upon the credulity of a superstitious, demoralized and lawless element in the community, aided and abetted by more lawless aliens to the South known as

Carpetbaggers. Similar named orders were speedily organized in all the Southern states and had a potent influence in settling the disturbed condition of the country.

“Fifth son (of Daniel and Sarah Carter) : John Conyers Carter was a young lawyer of Camden, South Carolina, in 1819 and was doing a large practice in 1821 when he contemplated moving to Charleston. At that time his constitution was much impaired and he probably died a bachelor when 34 years of age.

“Sixth son: Isaac Carter died at the age of 27 years and it does not appear that he was ever married.

“Seventh son: Alexander Carter. It appears that he was living in the District of Lancaster, South Carolina in 1831 and moved to Montgomery County, Alabama, where he owned a large plantation near Mount Meggs. He married Elizabeth —— and had —— sons and —— daughters.

“Eighth son: Milton Carter and Susan Blackman married —— and lived on Carter’s Creek in Maury County where he died and was buried in the old cemetery of the ‘Free Will Baptist Church.’ They and some of their children were members of that denomination. After his death a part of his family moved to Lawrence County, Tennessee, where they remained but a short time before settling in Giles County. They had sons and daughters (omitted).

“Third daughter: Mary Eliza Carter married John W. Smith and lived near Mount Pleasant, Tennessee, where they lost three small children within a few days from scarlet fever, after which they moved to Giles County with their two young sons, James Felix and John Conyers, and where Mr. Smith died February 17, 1837. After the family had lived on Pigeon Roost Creek for a few years where Mr. Smith died, his administrator, my father, bought for the widow and sons a larger and more desirable farm three miles from Pulaski on the Lawrenceburg road. John W. Smith was born October 8, 1798, and his wife on February 14, 1801, and were married February 20, 1823. (There is considerably more about this family but it is omitted.)

“Fourth daughter: Agnes Caroline Carter and Bernard M. Burch were married ——, 18—. She died of cholera

June 8, 1833, survived by her husband and one child named David William (further details omitted).

“Fifth daughter: Susannah Amelia Carter was a twin sister of Agnes Caroline and died in infancy.

“Eighth son: Anderson Carter died in Alabama.”

This completes the extracts concerning the children of Daniel and Sarah Conyers Carter. Next will be taken up the children of Dr. Benjamin Carter, fourth son of Daniel and Sarah Conyers Carter.

From the manuscript by Benjamin Franklin⁷ Carter:

“Reverting to my parents’ marriage and their children. My sister, Sarah Elizabeth, and Robert Rodes (a prominent farmer of Giles County) were married October 20, 1840, and had children as follows: Inez, Cynthia, Tyree, Frank Carter, May, Robert, Ben, Holland and Sallie. Inez married Rev. George Hunt, an Episcopal clergyman and founder of the Church of the Messiah in Pulaski. Mr. Hunt was born in Nashville on ——— and his wife February 4, 1842. (Here follows details about their children which are omitted.) Robert Rodes, Sr., born June 24, 1816, was a son of Tyree Rodes, a commissioner with Dr. Burpass (?) and Ralph Graves to establish the boundary and lay off the streets of Pulaski. His mother’s maiden name was Cynthia Holland, daughter of James Holland, a member of Congress from North Carolina. Tyree Rodes, Sr., and Cynthia Holland were married April 25, 1811, and were the progenitors of the Rodes in Tennessee. He was born 24 December, 1771, and his wife the 10 November, 1789. Their children were: Sarah Myra, James Holland, Robert, Sophia Selina and Tyree. Sarah Myra and John Harper Rivers (born 23 March, 1802) were married 29th of April, 1830. He died on the 11 July, 1836, survived by his widow and three children, named and born as follows: William Holland on the 19th of June, 1831; Cynthia Holland, 15th October, 1833; and Mary Elizabeth on February 8, 1836. Mrs. S. M. Rivers was born October 18, 1812. (See Rodes, Holland and Rivers Families.)

“My second sister, Cornelia Castera Carter, and Dr. Jacob P. Epperson, formerly of Alabama, were married

November 19, 1844. Their children were named Benjamin Carter and Elizabeth Lindsay. Another daughter died in infancy. Ben C. was prominently known in railroad circles and at death was Superintendent of the Georgia Central System. He married Fannie Scott, then of Kentucky, and named their children William, Fannie, Ben, Birdie, Edward G. and Cornelia. Ben C. Epperson (so called), born 1845, died in Milledgeville, Georgia, February —, 1903, subsequent to his wife who died —. Elizabeth L. Epperson and Josiah L. Percy, a prominent druggist of Pulaski, were married 11 October, 1869. He was born — and his wife on May 25, 1853. Their children were named: Fannie, Joseph, Cornelia, Elizabeth, Margaret and Louise. J. L. Percy was appointed warden of the State Prison at Nashville by Governor Robert Taylor and was also Consul to Colon, South America, under President Cleveland's administration. His family has resided several years in Nashville. Dr. Epperson, his wife, and their deceased descendants are buried in Maplewood Cemetery (Pulaski).

"My third sister, Mary Margaret Carter, and Robert H. Watkins, Sr., were married January 6, 1846. After living on his plantation a short time, at the mouth of Elk River, they moved to Pulaski and built a handsome residence where Martin College now stands. In 1861 they moved to a large residence they had built in Huntsville, Alabama, where Mrs. Watkins died January 31, 1864. He was born near Courtland, Alabama, and his wife in Pulaski. Their children: Mary Margaret, born —, married Yancey Newman, druggist of Birmingham, Alabama, on —. They had a son, Robert, who married Elizabeth Turner, since died, and a daughter named Elizabeth (called Bessie), who married Robert Stone. (The Watkins line is omitted from here on.)

"B. F. Carter (Benjamin Franklin Carter, only son of Dr. Benjamin Carter) and Cynthia H. Rivers were married on the 6th of April, 1852, at her mother's residence near Columbia, Tennessee, by Rev. Bishop James Otey." And in another place he writes: "B. F. Carter and Cynthia R. Carter (as she signed her name after marriage) and their children were born as follows: B. F. Carter, September 26,

1828; Cynthia Rivers, October 15, 1853. Their children: Myra Belle, May 12, 1853; John Rivers, April 8, 1855; Lizie Lindsay, April 16, 1859; Benjamin, October 8, 1861; Frank, February 8, 1864; Cynthia Rivers, September 1, 1866; Mary Margaret, April 17, 1869. Their children were named in baptism (as above)."

The children of Benjamin Franklin and Cynthia Rivers Carter extracted from the Benjamin Carter manuscript:

"Gustavus A. Pope and Myra Belle^s Carter were married November 4, 1875. He was born January 17, 1834, and his wife on May 12, 1853. Their children were named: G. A. Pope, Jr., Frank Carter, William Rivers, Julia, Mary Lesey and Myra Belle. G. A. Pope, Jr., was born December 23, 1876, and married Sada Hawkins of Birmingham, Alabama, November 19, 1902. She was born —, and her first (and only) child, Myra Belle III, was born April 2, 1904. Frank Carter Pope was born April 27, 1878.

"William Rivers Pope was born January 7, 1880, and married Virginia (daughter of John A. McFerrin, a Methodist clergyman) on October 20, 1903. She was born April 17, 1882. W. R. Pope enlisted in the U. S. Army on May 8, 1899, and was ordered to the Fourth Cavalry Regiment at Manila, Philippine Islands, where he was promoted to the rank of second lieutenant. After two years' service he joined the Second Cavalry in Cuba, and returning to the United States, sailed again for Manila with his bride via the Suez Canal, December 20, 1903.

"Julia Pope was born December 4, 1881. Mary Lesey Pope was born July 19, 1885. Myra Belle Pope II was born June 21, 1894, and died September 19, 1899. We are taught that 'Of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.'

"John Rivers^s Carter (second child and first son of Benjamin F. and Cynthia R. Carter) completed his education at the University of Virginia in Civil Engineering. He was soon employed in locating the Texas Pacific, the Mexican Central, and other railroads. Returning to Tennessee, he was successively elected City Engineer of Birmingham, Alabama, where he has since lived practicing his profession.

“Elizabeth Lindsay^s Carter (second daughter and third child) and Lewis P. Thatcher of Chattanooga, Tennessee, were married December 9, 1879. They resided in Chattanooga until her death March 1, 1886. Besides her husband she left two small daughters, named Louise Rivers, born September 30, 1880, and Nancy Belle, born August 13, 1883. The children were too young to realize their loss in their mother's death, but their aunt, Miss Mollie Thatcher, had fostered and cared for them with all but a mother's matchless love. Mrs. Thatcher was buried in the City Cemetery of Chattanooga under the shadow of Lookout Mountain.

“Benjamin^s Carter III (fourth child and second son, called Ben as his grandfather was) was chiefly educated at Giles College in Pulaski. In manhood he engaged in journalism in Birmingham, Alabama, where he also commenced the practice of law. Subsequently he was appointed by President Cleveland assistant to the attorney general of his Cabinet, and has since remained in Washington City, D. C., in active practice of his profession. (He died at Pulaski, Tennessee, January 1, 1929, and is buried there.)

“Frank^s Carter (fifth child and third son) died April 22, 1865, 14½ months old.

“Cynthia^s Rivers (sixth child and third daughter), named for her mother, has faithfully presided over the family homestead since her mother's death, and to her sedulous labors she adds a constant watch over her father's health. Consistently faithful to her church, she also cultivates a high order of musical talent, and, withal, her energy and industry—to a fault—are too much a tax on patient endurance. (She was born September 1, 1866, and died March 7, 1937, and is buried at Pulaski, Tennessee.)

“Mary^s Margaret II (seventh child and fourth daughter) died in the bloom of youth December 28, 1888, from an illness contracted while a pupil at Hollins Institute in Virginia. Her social and amiable nature endeared her to all who knew her, and tributes to her Christian faith were spoken from pulpits of her church and other Christian denominations.

"Mrs. Cynthia Rivers Carter died June 5, 1901, leaving to her bereaved family and numerous friends a noted example of a Christian wife and mother. She was confirmed in the Episcopal Church when a young lady by Bishop James Otey and after her marriage was one of the first members of her Church in Pulaski and led into its fold her family and others, rather by her teaching than persuasion. Charitable and liberal to all Christian creeds, she united with me in reverence for the Church of my fathers; but when I finally knelt at her church altar to be confirmed, her prayer of years was answered. The span of our married life was something less than fifty years, as I verily believe, in unison with our deceased children in Paradise, she prayerfully awaits the endless reunion of our family circle."

The above completes Benjamin Franklin Carter's narrative so far as it relates to his immediate family. Subsequent pages will have additional remarks as to his family. However, there are many passages in his narrative concerning related families which will follow.

"Reverting to the Rivers Family, Mrs. Sarah Myra Rivers, born 18 October, 1812, married the second time Joseph Trotter (born 1 January, 1798, died——, and is buried at Columbia, Tennessee), a widower and a cotton planter in Tunica County, Mississippi, who had but one son, Silas, an accomplished young man who died in Rio Janeiro and was buried at Columbia, Tennessee. The large and handsome Trotter residence south of Columbia with its furniture and all its outbuildings was burned by order of the Federal General Thomas Wood on the night of November 26, 1864—a certificate of which was sent to my wife by the said General. (This certificate is now in my possession—W. R. P.) Joseph Trotter died on his plantation in Mississippi June 8, 1862, after which his residence there, large and valuable gin house with all contents were burned by order of Federal Army authorities at Helena, Arkansas. Likewise all livestock and plantation supplies on the place were taken. In January, 1865, Mrs. Trotter went to Mississippi to look after her interest and died at Helena, Ar-

kansas, 12 March, 1865. The Federal Government has in no way compensated the heirs of Mr. and Mrs. Trotter.”

“John Carter, son of William Carter, was the executor of his uncle, Capt. Benjamin Carter (see ante) and rendered to my father a partial exhibit of the Testator’s cash and bonded assets, in the aggregate a large amount. (Papers in my possession indicate that the total value of the estate of Capt. Benjamin Carter at the time of his death in 1830 was approximately \$130,000.00.) At that time (1830 to 1837) an unprecedented stringency in the financial condition of the country bankrupted many wealthy citizens and large commercial houses. So the estate of Captain Carter was seriously impaired. He left a large land estate in South Carolina as well as in Tennessee and owned many negroes. I can remember, though a small boy then, that about 1834 my father returned from South Carolina with several negroes of said estate, including mechanics and two native-born Africans whose lingo was a source of amusement to Tennessee darkies.

“My father always was a humane master and careful of his servants’ welfare, some of whom were faithful members of his Church.

“After becoming executor as above, John Carter declined a third election to Congress. I have no data to show that he was ever married except a letter from Camden to my father in 1832 showing his impatience to be with his ‘family in Georgetown, D. C.’ ” (This John Carter was married. Mr. Leonardo Andrea of Columbia, South Carolina, sent me a copy of an article in the Camden, South Carolina, newspaper files, issue of 21 February, 1829: “The Hon. John Carter, representative in Congress from this District, was married in Washington, D. C., the 12th instant, to Miss Ellen Marbury, the daughter of Capt. William Marbury of Georgetown, D. C.” I have no record of children by this marriage.—W. R. P.)

From the narrative by Benjamin Franklin⁷ Carter: “The Society of the Cincinnati was established at the close of the Revolutionary War, in May, 1783, by Officers of the American Army, just previous to its disbanding, in the canton-

ment at Newburgh on the Hudson River and was named in honor of the renowned Roman who left his plow to serve his country as many soldiers of the American Army had done. It was designed to be a society of friends, to endure as long as they endured or any of their male posterity, and in failure thereof, the collateral branches judged worthy of membership. It was founded on certain immutable principles, to preserve inviolate the rights and liberties secured by the War, to promote national honor between the States, to render permanent the cordial relations existing among the officers and especially to assist such officers or their families as might be in need. The Society was divided into thirteen State Societies. All officers of the American Army after three years service, or who continued to the end of the War, were entitled to become parties to the institution, on subscribing one months' pay."

"The North Carolina Society was organized at Hillsborough October 28, 1783, and reorganized at Raleigh April 4, 1896, of which my great-uncle Captain Benjamin Carter of Second Regiment, North Carolina, Continental Infantry, was an original member, and by virtue of the Constitution thereof I became his successor February 22, 1898.

"This digression is here made for whomever it may hereafter concern."

Gustavus A. Pope IV, a son of Frank Carter Pope and great-grandson of Benjamin Franklin Carter, residing in Washington, D. C., is a member of the Society.

For the benefit of anyone desiring to use the manuscript mentioned above, a photostat copy will be sent to the State Library at Nashville, Tennessee. Some of the names omitted above are: Bowers, Buford, Hopkins, Johnson, Lane, Paschall, Owen, Pullen, Rodes, Rogers, Roland, Rothrock, Russell, Scott, Smith, Watkins, Flournoy. Also omitted are some collateral descendants of Daniel⁵ Carter.

In order to complete the Carter Family History, starting at the end of the manuscript by Benjamin F. Carter, the following is recorded:

The preceding writer, Benjamin Franklin⁷ Carter, died on February 10, 1910, and is buried by the side of his wife

and son in Maplewood Cemetery at Pulaski, Tennessee. He was truly a Southern gentleman of the old school, courteous to all and beloved by his entire community. Some of the pleasantest memories of the writer's childhood center around the Carter grandparents. My Pope grandparents both died long before my birth.

Benjamin F. Carter enlisted in the Confederate Army in October, 1862, as a private. He was appointed Captain on the Staff of Brigadier General John C. Brown and, on April 11, 1863, was promoted to Major on General Brown's staff, the latter having then been promoted to the rank of Major General. He served in that capacity until the close of the Civil War, and was paroled May 2, 1865, at Greensboro, North Carolina, whence he returned to his home in Pulaski, Tennessee.

To complete the history of the Carter children who survived the death of Benjamin F. Carter in order of their birth, the following is recorded:

1. Myra Belle Carter Pope died October 12, 1926. (See Pope Family.)

2. John Rivers Carter was postmaster at Birmingham, Alabama, from 1903 to December 21, 1908, during the administration of President Theodore Roosevelt. On January 24, 1906, he married Mrs. Susie Clark of Birmingham, a widow with one son, Basil. Mrs. Clark was the sweetheart of his young manhood, to whom he had remained faithful through the years. John R. Carter died January 20, 1921, and is buried in Birmingham. Mrs. Carter died February 16, 1922. There was no issue from this marriage. John Rivers Carter was a member of the Society of the Cincinnati succeeding his father, Benjamin F. Carter.

3. Mrs. Elizabeth Lindsay (Carter) Thatcher left two young daughters, Louise Rivers, born September 30, 1880, and Nancy Belle, born August 13, 1883.

Louise Rivers married Osgood Dowell (born 1877) of Washington, D. C., on June 29, 1905. They are now living at Riverside, Illinois. Mr. Dowell is a patent attorney. They have the following children:

Mary Elizabeth, born December 25, 1906.

John Thatcher, born July 21, 1908.

Richard Carter, born October 9, 1911.

Julian Cone II, born September 15, 1913.

Nancy Belle married Eugene Newkirk and now lives in Bayonne, New Jersey. There are no children by this marriage.

4. Benjamin Carter III practiced law in Washington, D. C., until November, 1928, and being then very ill, returned to his ancestral home in Pulaski, Tennessee, where he died on January 1, 1929. He was never married and throughout life performed many acts of kindness for members of his family as well as for others.

5. Cynthia Rivers Carter died 7 March, 1937, and is buried in Pulaski, Tennessee. She was never married.

With the death of these two latter children, this branch of the Carter Family in Middle Tennessee becomes extinct.

Line of Descent:

Capt. Thomas¹ Carter married Katherine² Dale, had

Capt. Thomas² Carter married Arabella³ Williamson, had

Daniel³ Carter married Elizabeth² Pannil, had

Robert⁴ Carter married Margaret⁵ Brunson, had

Daniel⁵ Carter married Sarah³ Conyers, had

Benjamin⁶ Carter married Elizabeth Kinchin⁵ Lindsay, had

Benjamin Franklin⁷ Carter married Cynthia Rivers.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

ALSTON FAMILY

The Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina by Groves, 1901:

The Alston Family is one of great antiquity, being descended in a direct line from Alfred the Great, King of England, 871-901, and the ancestral line of the latter goes back to HARDERICK, the first Saxon King—31 generations beyond Alfred the Great to B.C. 90. (I have this line on record.)

John Alston, the emigrant, was the son of John Alston and his wife, Anne Wallis, of Parvenham, England. He

was baptized at Felmersham, Bedfordshire, England, 5 December, 1758.

John Alston, the first of the family in North Carolina, lived to be very old. Tradition is very clear and emphatic in giving ODELL Castle as the manorial seat of the family in England.

John Alston probably came to the North Carolina Colony with Governor Archdale in 1694. His cousin, also John Alston, about eight years older, came with him and settled in South Carolina. That branch added an "l" to their name, spelling it ALLSTON.

John Alston of North Carolina died circa 1756. They were all descendants of a landed gentry in Suffolk and Bedford, England. (See Magazine of American Genealogy, AA-AMO, August-December, 1929, page 47.)

Page 91: The first mention of record on John Alston in North Carolina is a grant of 270 acres of land on the northwest side of Bennett's Creek in 1711. (This page is headed "John Alston," 1673-1758.)

A note says: John Alston first appears in Chowan County, North Carolina, in 1714. He probably came with his wife from Surry County, Virginia. His son, Solomon, was of age in 1727. Daughter, Sarah, married Philip Kearney. Daughter, Charity, married John Dawson. Wife, Mary, was Mary Clark before her marriage. (This paragraph is taken from NCH&GR 1/163. The account is in error in saying that Sarah married *Philip* Kearney; she married Lord Thomas Kearney, the father of Philip.)

Alstons and Allstons, etc., page 491: It is not known when Thomas Kearney and Sarah Alston were married, although it was most probably not later than 1730-32.

John Alston, the emigrant, settled near Gatesville, in Gates County, then a part of Chowan County, North Carolina. He was a member of the Assembly (CRNC 9/588). About 1700 he married Mary (born about 1687, died after 1758), a daughter of John Clark, who married Mary Palin of Pasquotank, North Carolina. (See Clark and Palin

Families.) They had: Sarah, who married circa 1730-32; Lord Thomas Kearney. (See Kearney Family.)

NCH&GR 1/315: Mary Clark married John Alston prior to 1700.

6W(2)347: John Alston was Juror, 1715; Grand Juror, 1721-24; Justice of the Peace and Associate Justice, Court of Oyer and Terminer, 1727-29; Captain until 1725, Major until 1729, and Colonel in the State Militia; Vestryman, St. Paul's Parish; Judge Superior Court, 1721-30; Revenue Collector for the King.

CRNC 1/453, 458: Sheriff, Chowan County, 1745-46.

CRNC 1/447: Magistrate, Chowan County, 1743.

CRNC 1/452: Administrator.

CRNC 4/346: Justice of the Peace, Chowan County, March 6, 1739.

The offices mentioned above also are given in Alston and Allstons, etc., which state: He was Juror, 1715; Grand Juror, 1721-24; Justice of the Peace and Associate Justice of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, 1727-29; he was called Captain until 1725, Major until 1729, and Colonel thereafter in the State Militia; Sheriff of Chowan County in 1746 and probably for sometime prior to that time; Vestryman, St. Paul's Parish, 1738-47; Judge of the Superior Court, 1721-30; Revenue Collector for the King, 1725.

NCH&GR 1/163: John Alston, Will, 20 February, 1755, 2nd December, 1758. Sons: Solomon, William, Philip; Daughters, Sarah Kearney and Charity Dawson. Wife, Mary.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, pages 6, 163: Will of John Alston, February 20, 1755-December 2, 1758. Mentions daughters Sarah Kearney and Charity Dawson.

Other authorities on the Alston Family are: Colonial Records of North Carolina, Vol. 2, pages 535-555, and History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, pages 22, 25, 27.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 70: Footnote: John Alston had 19 slaves, 1735.

Same, page 70: Footnote: John Alston was Sheriff of Edgecombe during the first election of members of the Assembly from Edgecombe, 1746.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Alston married Mary² Clark and had

Sarah² Alston who married Lord Thomas¹ Kearney and had

Philip² Kearney who married Elizabeth³ Kinchen and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

BROWN FAMILY

American Historical Magazine, 4/34: Lewis Brown lived on Rose Creek of Mcherrin River, Brunswick County, Virginia. Page 40: His first wife was Ann Lovett but date of marriage not given. Page 39: They had a son, Aaron Brown, who was born 28 February, 1757.

11W(1)270: Lewis Brown, Sr., was married 17 March, 1758; the second time to Martha Richardson, daughter of William Richardson, deceased. By this second marriage he had Lewis Brown, Jr., who must have been born 10 January, 1763, as he died 11 March, 1833, in Tennessee, "aged 70 years, 2 months and 1 day." Lewis Brown, Jr., moved to Giles County, Tennessee, in 1810 and settled, died and is buried about four miles below Pulaski, Tennessee, on Richland Creek.

American History Magazine, 4/40: Lewis Brown, Jr., married Cassandra Howell (born 3 October, 1768, died 28 April, 1834) in Brunswick County, Virginia, 16 December, 1784.

6T107: Lewis Brown, Sr., certified at a Court held for Brunswick County, Virginia, Tuesday, 25 February, 1782, as among "persons giving aid to the American Revolution."

D. A. R. Magazine, 68/244: Lewis Brown, Brunswick County, Virginia, listed as rendering services to the Conti-

nental Army. "Descendants of these patriots are eligible to membership in the D. A. R."

22V74: Lewis Brown, Sr.'s, Will, 1809, Brunswick County, Virginia (Will Book 7, page 372).

7W(1)38: Aaron Brown was married twice, first to Elizabeth Harwell, in Brunswick County, Virginia, on 19 December, 1778. Dates of her birth and death not now known. Page 40: He married, second, Elizabeth Melton (born 13 May, 1757; died 5 August, 1818) of Northampton County, North Carolina. Date of marriage not now known.

It will be noted that both wives of Aaron Brown were named Elizabeth. By one of these he had a daughter, Elizabeth, who married William Rivers (*American History Magazine*, 4/34). (See Rivers Family.)

2T250: Aaron Brown was Security for a marriage of Jesse Berryman and Boyce Jackson, 27 July, 1790, Greenville County, Virginia.

5C613: Warrants issued by Auditor, June 6, 1792: "Aaron Brown & als.," £2 s12 p6.

15H52: On November 22, 1796, Aaron Brown, Gentleman, with 12 others appointed trustees of Ebenezer Academy, Brunswick County, Virginia.

9C77, 83: Aaron Brown member of Standing Committee, 23 January, 1800, Brunswick County.

9C279: Aaron Brown, member of the Court of Oyer and Terminer, 11 February, 1802, Brunswick County, Virginia.

Sketches of Bench and Bar, Tennessee, page 183: Aaron Brown enlisted before the age of 20 years and served with credit in the Revolutionary War.

Order Book No. 18, page 342, Lawrenceville, Virginia: Aaron Brown was Justice of the Peace for Brunswick County, Virginia, 28 July, 1800.

7W(1)38, Footnote: Aaron Brown was a clergyman who officiated at many marriages of people mentioned, 1770-1790.

9W(1)156 and 20W(1)199: Lewis Brown, witness to a marriage, 22 December, 1778, Brunswick County, Virginia.

Aaron Brown had a son, Aaron V. Brown. In the latter's speeches published in 1854, the preface says that his

father enlisted while a minor for three years in the Continental Army, took part in the retreat through the Jerseys, was at the battle of Trenton, and one of the sufferers at Valley Forge. At the end of his enlistment, he returned to Brunswick County where he resided for nearly forty years. A minister of the Methodist persuasion, an upright civil magistrate, and a staunch republican of the old Jeffersonian school. He is buried where he settled on Richland Creek, near Aspen Hill, seven miles below Pulaski, Tennessee, still known as the Brown Farm.

Aaron V. Brown was Governor of Tennessee, Member of Congress, and in the Cabinet of President Buchanan. He was brother of Elizabeth Brown who married William Rivers. (See above and Rivers Family.)

From the Carter manuscript History of the Carter Family by Benjamin F. Carter in possession of the writer, page 25: "Reverting to my wife's father, John H. Rivers. His parents, William and Elizabeth (Brown) Rivers lived and died in Brunswick County, Virginia, leaving two young sons, John H. and William Wilkins Rivers, who were brought to Tennessee by their maternal grandfather, Aaron Brown, in 1813, who was their testamentary guardian and executor of their father's will. J. H. was born March 23, 1802, and W. W. — 1804. Their father died March, 1809. James W. Rivers, son of W. W., now (1904) lives on part of the land bought for the two young sons by their grandfather Brown. Aaron Brown had two sons and two daughters, William, Aaron V., Sarah and —. William owned a large farm on Elk River. Aaron V. was a lawyer, Member of Congress, Governor of Tennessee, and Postmaster General in President Buchanan's Cabinet."

Line of Descent:

Lewis¹ Brown married Ann Lovett and had

Aaron² Brown who married Elizabeth Harwell and had

Elizabeth³ Brown who married William³ Rivers and had

John⁴ Harper Rivers who married Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes and had

Cynthia⁵ Holland Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

BRUNSON FAMILY

History of South Carolina, Vol. 4, page 386: Brunson is an old and distinguished family in this State (it was sometimes spelled Brownson). Descendants are of Scotch-Irish and Huguenot families. In 1568 it is recorded that George Brownson (Brunson) went to England with Mary, Queen of Scots, and settled in Derbyshire. From that county, a son, Richard, and two of his sons, Richard and John, came to America early in the Seventeenth Century and settled in Connecticut. Isaac Brunson, a descendant of Richard, was the founder of the family in South Carolina, residing in Craven County prior to 1736. His son, Matthew, served in the Revolution. He joined an emergency company formed in St. Mark's Parish commanded by Capt. Matthew Singleton on August 26, 1775. He later served in Captain Conyers' company of Marion's Brigade and was killed in a skirmish with British troops in Clarendon County in January, 1781. Matthew Brunson married Ann Brown, daughter of William Brown, another soldier of the Revolution who fought under Marion.

SCH&GM 1/185: William, Charles, James, George and Matthew Brunson voluntarily enlisted in Capt. Matthew Singleton's company of horse, 20 August, 1775. "St. Mark's Parish, on the High Hills of the Santee."

Same, 6/75: Isaac Brunson in 1712 and Joseph Brunson in 1722 owning some of the lots as forming part of the Distinctive Church, Town of Dorchester, South Carolina.

Same, 11/232: Capt. Isaac Brunson had a company of foot, October, 1749.

Same, 20/154: Joseph Brunson disposes of 200 acres, 1743.

Same, 19/132: Abstract of Marriage Bonds, South Carolina, December, 1743–November, 1744, William Brunson of the Parish of St. James Santee, parish bond to Governor Glen, 26 April, 1744. License to Rev. Davis Dwight to marry William Brunson and Elizabeth Cooper, spinster. (James Glen was Governor of South Carolina, 1739-1755.)

Same, 11/241: William and Sarah Brunson baptized their son, Peter, December 28, 1754, in Orange County. James and Elizabeth Brunson, sponsors.

Same, 2/264: William Brunson in Capt. Matthew Singleton's Troop of Light Horse, 13 September, 1775, to 22 September, 1775.

Same, 2/20: William Brunson, member Capt. James Jones' Volunteer Militia Company, 28 September, 1775.

Same, 260/61: William Brunson, Sr., member of Captain Fullwood's Company of Volunteer Militia, 20 September, 1775.

Same, 2/181: David Brunson, private, 31 years old, in Captain Edward — company, Colonel Thomson's Regiment of Rangers, 25 January, 1775.

Same, 2/182: Isaac Brunson, 26 years old, and Josiah Brunson, 25 years old, in Captain Edward — company, Colonel Thomson's Regiment, 25 January, 1775.

Same, 3/67-68: David Brunson, Isaac Brunson and Josiah Brunson, 1 September, 1775, to 20 October, 1775, in Fifth Company, Rangers, Col. William Thomason, Esqr.

Same, 5/154: Jacob Brunson, private, Capt. Field Farar's Company, August, September, and October, 1779.

Same, 7/218: Jacob Brunson granted bounty as Continental (Revolutionary) soldier. (Page 312, Fourth Volunteer Bounty grants, South Carolina, office, Secretary of State.)

The following data on this family is a compilation of that I have acquired over the years and of that by Mr. Leonardo Andrea, Genealogist, Columbia, South Carolina, principally the latter.

No marriage licenses were required in South Carolina until 1912, hence there has been considerable difficulty in establishing dates of births, marriages and deaths.

Marriage contracts: When the bride owned real estate, she often made it over to a trustee, and usually her kinsman, to hold her estate so that it would not be liable for the debts of her husband or under his control, for at that time a married woman's estate was in the name of her husband.

Snowden's Notes on Brownson-Brunson: John Brownson, son of Richard, Jr., was the first to come into South Carolina. A Colonial will signed 11 January, 1711, wife is listed as Hannah. . . . Isaac Brunson (son) and Executor, "my lands in South Carolina and new dwelling at death of his mother, Hannah Brunson." (See later entry.)

Land Grants from the Lords Proprietors: All the first Brunsons came from New England with the company of Congregationalists from Dorchester, Mass., and settled in old Dorchester in South Carolina and in the Parish of St. George. Much data can be found in the records of Old Midway Congregational Church in Liberty County, Georgia, where many of the first settlers at St. George, Dorchester removed.

John Brownson came to what is now Farmington, Connecticut, in 1639. The name of the wife is not listed. He died in 1680 and his children's names are from his Estate Settlement and from Church records:

Jacob Brownson, born 1640.

John Brownson, born 1643.

Isaac Brownson, born 1645.

Abraham Brownson, born 1647.

Mary, wife of John Wyatt.

Dorcas, wife of Stephen Hopkins.

Sarah, wife of John Kilbourn.

Dr. E. R. Brownson, Mayville, North Dakota: Edmond Scott of New England married Hannah Bird and among their children was: Hannah Scott who married John Brunson.

Dr. Brownson gives this data: Lineage John² Brownson, Richard¹ Brownson: John Brownson, son of Richard Brownson, Jr., born 1646, baptized 20 February, 1659, Farmington, Connecticut, died 1680, South Carolina. (If this John Brownson was the same who signed the will mentioned above in 1711, there is large error in year dates.) John Brownson married Hannah Scott. All children were born in Wethersfield, Connecticut. They are:

John, Jr., born 26 August, 1665.

Mary, born 15 September, 1668.

Sarah, born 22 August, 1671, married Daniel McGregor.

Isaac, born 1671/1672, and died 20 May, 1739, in Craven County, South Carolina. (This date does not tally with that given by his widow, Mrs. Margaret Brunson. See later. The date may have been May 20, 1732.)

References: Stiles, Windson Records, Vol. 2, page 796: Winthrop's Medical Journals; Puritans, page 346; see will of John Brownson, recorded in Charleston, South Carolina, Book 1711-1718, pages 33-34; Farmington Land Records, Vol. 6, page 206; New Haven Genealogical Magazine, Vol. 2, pages 111-112.

John Brownson (Brunson) had a "Warrt. out of ye Sec'tyes office dated ye 28 Day of October, 1695, signed by ye Hono'ble John Archdale, Esqr., Gov. for two hundred acres of land upon ye Account of arivall rights whose name is recorded in ye Sec'tyes office. . . . Etc." (Land grants from the Lords Proprietors.)

John Brownson (Brunson) of the Parish of St. George, Dorchester . . . a Colonial will signed 11 January 1711. . . . Proven date is missing . . . wife is listed as Hannah Brownson . . . she is to have a home as long as she lives at my newly built dwelling house in this Parish . . . she is to have the Indian girl named Peggy . . . she is to have support from my plantation . . . the land in Farmington, Connecticut, which was given to her by deed of gift and recorded in Hartford, Connecticut, in deed books and which land was a deed of gift to my wife Hannah from her father (not named), this land is confirmed to her without any right or interest in it.

My children named as:

Abraham Brunson & Ex . . . to have all my lands in Connecticut, except as stated below.

John Brunson, my deceased son . . . to his son, John Brunson, my grandson, I leave my lands at Notchy Sleepy Plain, Connecticut.

To my granddaughter, Mary, the wife of Preserved Ford, I give 40 shillings and no more.

Joseph Brunson & Ex . . . to have £5 sterling and what I have given him already.

Isaac Brunson & Ex . . . My lands in South Carolina and new dwelling at the death of his mother, Hannah Brunson.

Sarah, the wife of Daniel Macgregory . . . I will the slave, Peggy, the Indian girl, at the death of her mother, Hannah Brunson.

Grace (no surname for her), my daughter, with my daughter, Sarah, will heir all my personal estate and the residue.

Witnesses, etc., recorded in Will Book 1711-1718, page 34.

(This generation spells the name BRUNSON.)

22 May, 1739, and Vol. 6, page 207, Land Records of Connecticut. . . . Published in the New Haven Genealogical Magazine. . . . Farmington Land Records are the following:

Margaret Brunson, widow of Isaac Brunson (both spelled Brownson), ye son of John Brownson, Sr., deceased, and which was formerly inhabitant of Wethersfield, Connecticut, conveys for love of my children, that is to say, my five sons, all of Craven County, South Carolina, . . . my right in lands.

George Brownson	Isaac Brownson	James Brownson
David Brownson	WILLIAM Brownson	

(Andrea: Here is the William of whom I thought had a daughter, Margaret Brunson, who married Robert Carter in 1754.)

Dr. E. R. Brownson, Mayville, North Dakota: Isaac Brunson, William Brunson, David Brunson, James Brunson, all of Craven County, South Carolina, and sons of John Brownson, Sr., deceased, which was formerly inhabitant of Wethersfield, Connecticut, do hereby convey to John Brownson of Craven County, South Carolina, all rights in Farmington and Wethersfield, Connecticut. . . . 20 May, 1739.

Land Grants from the King to Brunsons:

There are many land grants from the King to many Brunsons in South Carolina including Abraham, Daniel, James, Josiah, Isaac, Sr., and his wife, Margaret, and Isaac, Jr.

Among the above was 100 acres on Ashley River in Berkeley County, 15 September, 1705, to Isaac, Jr., and on 4 December, 1735, 100 acres in Craven County to Mrs. Margaret Brunson (at this time she was a widow).

(Andrea: "For some reason I am inclined to think that Col. William Rivers Pope comes through this Isaac Brunson.")

Isaac Brunson signed his will 20 February, 1732 (see under Margaret Brunson below), and it was stated by his wife, Margaret. We do not find this will but know now that his five sons were: William, Isaac, Sr., James, George, and David (see above). This Isaac, Sr., died sometime after 20 February, 1732, and before 21 January, 1733.

Memorial Book of Tax Returns, Book 3, page 142:

Mrs. Margaret Brunson, a land return for taxes made in Charleston by her 21 January, 1733 . . . whereas the Lords Proprietors, the 5th February, 1704, granted to William Way, Sr., the 115 acres and 22 rods of land partly in the Parish of St. James Goose Creek and partly in the Parish of St. George, Dorchester, it being part of a larger grant and is now bounded by the lands of Nathaniel Summers, Joseph Summers and Mrs. Margaret Brunson and Whereas Mose Way, Sr., made over said tract by deed dated 17 January, 1708/09 to Isaac Brunson, late planter of South Carolina and who by his will dated 20 February, 1732, bequeathed said tract of land to his wife, Margaret, who now holds said land in her own right and title, etc. . . . Also for 57½ acres of land by the Lords Proprietors dated 5 February, 1704/05, and confirmed said land to Thomas Way in St. George Parish, it being a part of a larger tract now bounded by Mrs. Brunson, Robert Miller, Jr., and Aaron Way, Jr., and whereas Thomas Way by deed dated 6 May, 1723, did deed the same to Isaac Brunson, now deceased (return made 21 January, 1733), and during his lifetime by a will signed by him dated 20 February, 1732, did bequeath to his wife, the said Margaret Brunson, this tract of land, etc.

Andrea: This Margaret Brunson, widow of Isaac Brunson, is likely the same Mrs. Margaret Brunson who took 100 acres of land in Craven County, 4 December, 1735.

Revolution:

Archives of South Carolina, Continental Service in Washington, D. C.: William Brunson listed as serving in Continental Regiments, Nos. 26 and 45. Also listed are: Alexander, David, George and Jacob Brunson.

SCH&GM 2/260, 1/185 and 2/264: William Brunson, Jr., in Captain Singleton's Troop of Light Horse, 13 September, 1775 to 22 September, 1775. Also appearing in the same organization were William (must have been Sr.), Charles, James, George and Matthew Brunson.

Revolution: William Brunson, Sr., in Captain Fullwood's Company of Volunteers, 20 September, 1775. On 28 September, 1775, there was a William Brunson in the company of Capt. James James. (Could be the same man as enlistments at that time were short ones.)

Revolution: William Brunson, Sr. . . . two claims . . . first for supplies furnished to the Continental Troop and attached were two receipts signed 25 February, 1780, and 8 May, 1781, by Thomas Wade, Com. G, . . . also for service of William Brunson, Sr., as sergeant and lieutenant . . . the two claims were sworn to before William Maston, J. P. as Camden District, 8 July and 31 July, 1784 . . . order dated 22 July, 1788, "Please to pay to Mr. John Robinson my claims for my service under Capt. James McCauley in his Company of Militia Light Horse and for the beef which I furnished to Thomas Wade." Signed: William Brunson, Sr., before John Dickey, J. P.

Statesburg: In the famed Fredericksburg Declaration of Rights Against the British signed by Citizens of the High Hill at Fredericksburg 1775 these Brunson names appear: Isaac Brunson, George Brunson, William Brunson (must have been the Sr., as he had brothers Isaac and George) Moses Brunson.

Andrea: In both the Brunson and Conyers work I have done for Col. Pope I have found the old Carter MS entirely accurate . . . and I believe the Carter MS correct when it stated . . . Margaret, wife of Robert Carter, was a daughter of WILLIAM BRUNSON and married in 1754.

Margaret Brunson married Robert Carter in 1754. Dr. E. R. Brownson, Mayville, No. Dak., writes: "It seems to me that you have made the proper deductions as to Margaret Brunson at it fits into all angles of the family history as far as we know."

It seems logical to assume that this Margaret, daughter of William Brunson, was named for her maternal grandmother. The name of Margaret's mother is not now known.

Line of Descent:

Richard¹ Brownson had

John² Brownson who married Hannah Scott and had

Isaac³ Brunson who married Margaret and had

William⁴ Brunson who married —— and had

Margaret⁵ Brunson who married Robert⁴ Carter—see Carter and Pope Lines. Note change in way of spelling the name in third generation.

CLAIBORNE FAMILY

1V313 et seq.: The ancient family from which the patentee descended derived its name from the Manor of Cleburne, or Cliborne, in Westmoreland, near the River Eden. The Manor is named in the Domesday Book (1086, A.D.) and the family was for many generations lords of this place and of Bampton, Candale and Kyne.

Colonial and Revolutionary Lineages of America, Vol. 4, P. 64: The ancestors of Colonel (William) Claiborne were: Bardolf, Lord of Ravensworth and other manors. He had a son Akaris, or Acarius, FitzBardolf who died in 1211. He had a son Hervius (Herve).

1V313 et seq.: The first of the line appearing in the Pedigrees is: 1. Herve; 2. Alanus de Cliborne (A.D. 1216); 3. Herve; 4. Jeoffrey Fitz Hervey; 5. Robert de Cliborne (A.D. 1336), Knight of the Shire (M.P.) for Westmoreland, 1384, who married Margaret de Cundale and had: 6. John de Clyborne (A.D. 1380) father of; 7. Rowland Cleburne (A.D. 1380) father of: 8. John de Cleburne who married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Curven, of Worthington Hall, Cumberland (a descendant of Malcolm II, King

of Scotland) died August 4, 1489 and left: 9. Thomas Cleburne (A.D. 1421) and had: 10. Nicholas and 10. Robert (A.D. 1531) who married Eleanor, daughter and co-heiress of George Kirkbride and had: 11. Eleanor and 11. Edmund Claborne (A.D. 1540) who married a daughter of ——— Layton, of Dolmaine, County Cumberland. This Edmund (11) and ——— Layton had issue, 12. Thomas and 12. William and 12. John and 12. Richard Cleburne (A.D. 1553) who married Eleanor Lancaster of Stockbridge and Barton, County of Westmoreland and had issue: 13. Edmund of Millerby, York-shire and of Cleburne Hall (A.D. 1585) who married Grace, daughter of Sir Alan Bellingham of Levins, Westmoreland and had issue: 14. Thomas and 14. William who settled in Virginia.

The Harris Family of Virginia, page 14 says: William Claiborne, younger son of Earl Claiborne of Westmoreland, England, Lord of two Manoral Estates, a cousin of the Countess of Pembroke.

1V1,20,315: William Claiborne, colonel, born in England in 1587 and resided in Virginia from 1621 to 1676. Died "Romancoke," King William County on the York River, 1676. Married Elizabeth Buller, 1621. Commander-in-General of all the Colonial Forces in the campaign against the Indians. First Secretary of Virginia, Treasurer for life, Member of the Council and Deputy Governor. Appointed Royal Surveyor for the Colony of Virginia and came over with Sir Francis Wyatt in 1621. Ruler of Maryland and Parliamentary Commissioner with Bennett 1652. Member of the Legislature, 1666.

Same, page 313: William Claiborne, Gent., of James City (reference grant of land for transportation of three servants to Virginia) "Granted by Wyatt, June 3, 1624."

9W(1)128: William Claiborne (Secretary) appears to have married twice, 1st Jane Butler and 2d, Elizabeth. And, wife of Captain William Claiborne, son of the Secretary was named Elizabeth Tudman.

Col. and Rev. Lineages of America, pages 64, 347: Colonel William Claiborne married Elizabeth, or Jane Buller of London. They had a daughter (4th child) Mary,

who married, 1st a Mr. Rice and 2nd, Robert Harris (see Harris Family).

The RODES Family Bible, 1829, in possession of the writer says: "Major Robert Harris' wife was Mourning Glenn. He was the son of William Harris and Temperance Overton, his wife. William Harris was the son of Robert Harris and his wife, Mary Rice Claiborne, who was the daughter of William Claiborne and Elizabeth Buller, his wife."

1V313 et seq.: William Claiborne was born about 1587 and is first noticed when the Virginia Company engaged him as a surveyor. He came to Virginia with Governor Wyatt in 1621. He was Secretary for the Colony and member of the Council, from, at intervals, 1627 to 1660. On April 16, 1642 the King appointed him Treasurer for life but it is not known how long he served in this capacity. In 1629 he commanded an expedition against the Indians and again in 1644. There is much detail about him which is omitted from this narrative.

17thC&IofW, page 48: At a Court at James City, 31 March, 1628, Present . . . Mr. Clayborne . . .

Same, page 61: On October 3, 1650, Parliament passed an Act prohibiting trade with the Barbadoes, Virginia and other colonies gave the Council of State authority to reduce those colonies. This was because of civil war in England and the Virginia House of Burgesses, under the domination of the Royal Governor, Sir William Berkeley, refused to acknowledge the authority of Parliament.

Pursuant to this authority, the Council of State, the 26th of September, 1651 appointed certain persons to reduce Virginia to obedience. These persons were, . . . Captain William Claiborne . . .

Same, page 62: Governor Berkeley agreed to surrender to the Commissioners on March 12, 1652, and the articles of surrender were a remarkable document for its day and time, "It is a forerunner of the Declaration of Independence made nearly 125 years later." These articles were signed by William Claiborne as one of the three commissioners.

Same, page 63: The three commissioners then proceeded to Maryland where 29 March, 1652, which peacefully submitted to the commissioners who returned to Virginia where, on April 30, 1652, the House of Burgesses elected William Bennett, one of the commissioners, governor of Virginia.

Same, page 64: Colonel William Claiborne was elected Secretary of State and a new Council was chosen.

Same, page 503: says that William Claiborne was the first Secretary of the Colony (Virginia).

Line of Descent:

William¹ Claiborne married Elizabeth Buller and had Mary² Claiborne who married Robert² Harris and had William³ Harris who married Temperance Overton and had

Robert⁴ Harris who married Mourning Glenn and had Sarah⁵ Harris who married Capt. John³ Rodes and had Tyree⁴ Rodes who married Cynthia³ Holland and had Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes who married John Harper⁴ Rivers and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

CLARK FAMILY

The Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina, by Groves, 1901, page 98: John Clark died 30 May, 1689, leaving an only child, Mary, who married John Alston. (See Alston Family.)

NCH&GR 1/194: Abstract of Wills, Chowan County; John Clark, Pasquotank or Perquimans, May 30, 1689-July 27, 1689.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 73: John Clark, May 30, 1686. Wife and Executrix, Mary.

The Alstons, etc., John Clark married Mary Palin (see Palin Family) of Pasquotank, North Carolina, about 1686. She was the daughter of John Palin (died August 16, 1737) leaving his wife, Sarah; son, John; and daughter, Mary, born circa 1687, died after 1758. M. John Alston.

NCH&GR 1/194: Mary Clark, widow of John Clark, 30 May, 1689. Test: Henry Palin, Chowan County.

Same, 1/82: Mrs. Mary Clark, widow of John Clark August 1, 1696.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Clark had

Mary² Clark who married John¹ Alston and had

Sarah² Alston who married Lord Thomas¹ Kearney and had

Philip² Kearney who married Elizabeth³ Kinchen and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

There were other Clarks in Chowan County just subsequent to the above and, probably, at the same time. I give the data but I have not connected any of them with our line.

NCH&GR 2/307: Thomas Clark married Amelia Gray. Issue (1) John Clark, no date, circa 1700.

Same, 1/442: John Clark and others sign petition for a Court, Nuse River inhabitants, no date but circa 1706.

Same, 2/280: John Clark, member Precinct Court, Chowan County, 1715.

Same, 1/39: Abstracts of Wills, Chowan County, John Clark of Perquimans. Wife, Ann; sons, John and Thomas, September 3, 1716-November 14, 1717.

Same, 2/297: John Clark, Justice of the Peace, June 3, 1718, Chowan County.

Same, 3/281: John Clark signs certificate reference killing of a "wild catt." No date but circa 1718.

Same, 1/42: John Clark of Perquimans, alive 17 February, 1727/8.

6W(2)347: John Clark of Albemarle County, North Carolina was a colonel in the Indian Wars, 1754; Member of the Legislature, 1734; Vestryman St. Thomas Parish, Chowan County, North Carolina, no date given.

COLEMAN FAMILY

54V258-9: Robert¹ Coleman was born in England circa 1656. He settled in Rappahannock County, Va., which later became Essex County where he was Justice of the Peace, 1703, 1709. Sheriff of the county 1710 and 1712. His will was admitted to probate before the Essex Court 13 August, 1713. He married, possibly in England, Ann (Spilsby?). Their son, Robert² Coleman resided in Drysdale Parish, King and Queen County and by 1745 moved to Caroline County. While a resident of King and Queen County, he married, on 26 January, 1702/03, Mary, daughter of Samuel and Susannah Clayton of Gloucester and King and Queen Counties. Robert Coleman was doubtless a man of affairs . . . His will was recorded in Caroline County 13 May, 1748. Their son, Samuel³ Coleman was in King and Queen County 27 April, 1704. Tradition states that Samuel Coleman's wife was Elizabeth, nee Wyatt. She appears on the record as Betty Coleman. The will of Samuel Coleman was proved in Caroline County Court 10 June, 1748.

The Caroline County Order Book gives the children of Samuel Coleman who died in 1748. They were: Spilsby and Elizabeth. Edmund Pendleton, Gent., qualified as guardian of Elizabeth Coleman immediately after the death of her father.

32V146: Susannah Clayton, widow, had 700 acres in King and Queen County, 1704.

32V146: Samuel Coleman had 470 acres in King and Queen County, 1704.

12T249: Elizabeth Coleman, sister of Spilsby Coleman, married William Daniel, Jr., prior to 1747.

Line of Descent:

Robert¹ Coleman married Ann Spilsby and had

Robert² Coleman who married Mary Clayton and had

Samuel³ Coleman who married Elizabeth Wyatt and had

Elizabeth⁴ Coleman who married William² Daniel and had

Sarah³ Daniel who married James² Lindsay and had
John³ Lindsay who married Mary² Masterson and had
John⁴ Lindsay who married Sarah³ Kearney and had
Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

CONYERS FAMILY

13V327: Has picture of "Hutton Conyers" (house) Yorkshire, England. Margaret, daughter of Sir William Mallory, married John Conyers of Eaton-on-Usk and was mother of Christopher Conyers who married a sister of Cardinal Allen, circa 1553-4.

3W(1)155, 221: Sir William Thompson, Barrister, Member of Parliament, Knight, married Julia, daughter of Sir Christopher Conyers, Bt., of Harden in the Bishoprick of Durham, 1711. Julia was the widow of Sir William Blackett, a baronet of Wallington, in Northumberland, who died in 1705, leaving one son and six daughters.

Lists of "Persons of Quality" from England to the Virginia plantations, by Hotten, page 30: "Jo: (John?) Conniers, 21 years, to Barbadoes vj^o January, 1634." (Many of the emigrants from England to Virginia and other southern Colonies came by way of the Barbadoes).

The "Conyers Family of South Carolina and Georgia" in the DAR Library, Washington, D. C.: There is scarcely an American Family whose records are so filled with interesting traditions and adventures as the Conyers of America—the scions of one of England's most notable families.

The heads of this family were Earls of Shrewsbury and Barons of Sokebourne, of County Durham, descended from Roger de Coigneirs, of Normandy, France, who came with William the Conqueror in 1066 to England and became Constable of Durham in 1690.

The Conyers of South Carolina descended from a cadet branch, namely, the Conyers of Hornby Castle in Yorkshire. (29V128: Henry Pudsey, Esq., of Bolton, will 6 September, 1517, proved 1 March, following, to be buried at Bolton; married Margaret, daughter of Sir John Conyers of Bolton

who was buried at Bolton 1500). The Conyers were famed for the beauty of their women and the prowess of their men in fighting. The Conyers were powerful at one time in the history of England. They were famed for chivalry, bravery and their unsullied honor.

The Yorkshire Conyers descend from the D'Arcys', deGreys, Nevilles, King Edward I of England, William the Conqueror and Alfred the Great and from the Kings of France, Louis IV, Charles II, Louis II and Emperor Charlemagne. In America their deeds have been quite well recorded also.

There are many entries of the Conyers in the various parish registers of South Carolina, and many names are identical with the North Carolina names: Isabel, William, Richard. Isabel was the daughter of William Conyers, Esq., of Edistoe Island, will dated 1744. William Conyers name is found often.

Richard Conyers was born in 1734, son of William and Elizabeth Conyers of St. Helena's Parish, South Carolina. This family settled near the Savannah River, the dividing line between South Carolina and Georgia and in the State of Georgia where several of the Conyers located.

John Conyers and his brother William Conyers received grants of land on or near "Briar Creek," close to the Savannah River. John Conyers who lived prior to the above, married Mary Quarterman, July 5, 1717 and had issue: a. James, born 24 May, 1718; b. Elizabeth Honor Conyers, born 27 February, 1720.

James Conyers married Mary McIntosh 18 December, 1744. He was granted a large tract of land in the Black River, Craven District, August, 1757. His will was recorded at Sumter, South Carolina, dated 5 March, 1783. They had the following children: a. Major James Conyers; b. Captain Daniel Conyers; c. Straughan Conyers; d. Elizabeth Conyers; e. Mary Conyers; f. Sarah Conyers, married Daniel Carter. (See Carter Family.) Their home was called "Brewington Manor." There are many interesting legends about them.

Major James Conyers was a volunteer and received his commission as captain of the 5th South Carolina Regiment during the Revolution. He died in 1781. Fought in the battle of Round-O. His home was about four miles north of Brewington Ridge, on the road to Sumter and on the hills of Black River. His will was made February 19, 1780 and recorded 1783. His wife was Susannah Nelson.

Captain Daniel Conyers married Mary Witherspoon, daughter of John Witherspoon. She was born in 1764 and died in 1822. He fought with great bravery in the Revolution.

Sarah Conyers married Daniel Carter, who was the son of Robert Carter, born about 1734 in Virginia. They settled in Sumter District, South Carolina about 1752. He (Robert) married Margaret, daughter of William Brunson, and was a member of the Provisional Congress in Charleston in 1775. His will was dated December 28, 1795. (See Carter Family.)

NCH&GR 1/443: A Charles Conyers is mentioned as a "Test" in the will of George Powers, March 6, 1694/5, Chowan Precinct, Edenton, North Carolina.

A John Conyers appeared in South Carolina in 1704.

SCH&GM 10/238: James Conyers mentioned on August 13, 1697.

(Migration was frequently from north to south along the Atlantic Coast and if the earlier Conyers settled first in Virginia, it is possible that they then went south to North Carolina and to South Carolina.)

SCH&GM 13/35: Mary, daughter of Hannah Conyers, baptized October 7, 1728.

Same, 13/32: Mary, daughter of Hannah Conyers, buried January 16, 1728/9.

History of South Carolina by Snowden, 3/7: The Conyers Family has lived in Clarendon County, formerly Sumter District, since prior to the Revolutionary War. They were of English descent.

SCH&GM, Vol. 3. All the entries from this volume are under the heading "St. Helena's Parish Register":

Page 48: Conyers, Thomas, son, William and Elizabeth, born July 10, 1725. Baptized May 16, 1732 by Peasely. Married by D. Orr, December 10, 1744, Elena Scott, spin.

Page 48: Conyers, Elizabeth, spin. daughter of William and Elizabeth, born May 28, 1738. Baptized May 28, 1738 by Jones. Married August 3, 1755.

Page 48: Conyers, Elizabeth, wife to William Conyers, born 1700, baptized May 16, 1732 by Peasely. Buried January, 1739.

Page 48: Conyers, John, son of William and Elizabeth. Born January 27, 1728. Baptized May 16, 1732 by Jones. Married by Peasely May 10, 1752. Elizabeth Hicks, widow buried February 10, 1755.

Page 116: Elizabeth Hicks, widow, to John. Married by Peasely, May 10, 1752, John Conyers, bach.

Page 48: Conyers, William, son of William and Elizabeth, born September 21, 1731. Baptized May 16, 1732 by Jones.

Page 48: Conyers, Richard, son of William and Elizabeth, born December 15, 1734. Baptized June 28, 1736 by Jones.

Page 49: Conyers, Ann, wife to John.

Page 50: Conyers, William, father to Thomas Conyers, buried 8 February, 1755.

Page 50: Conyers, Elizabeth, widow of John, married by Peasely, April 20, 1756, John Swain.

Page 52: Conyers, Richard, son of Richard and Sarah, born November 14, 1759. Baptized April 15, 1760 by Cooper.

SCH&GM 23/52: Richard, son of Richard and Sarah Conyers, born November 14, 1757. Baptized April 15, 1760.

Same, 21/157: John Conyers and Elizabeth Stone married May 22, 1793. He died November 30, 1799 in his 29th year.

Same, 20/134: June 9, 1759 "as the small-pox has broke out on Four of Capt. Conyers' people on Sullivant's Island . . ."

Same, 1/185: Daniel and James Conyers voluntarily enlist in Capt. Matthew Singleton's company of horse,

August 26, 1775 at "St. Mark's Parish, on the high hills of the Santee."

Same, 2/260-1: James Conyers, Jr., and Daniel Conyers in Capt. Fullwood's company of Volunteer Militia, 20 September, 1775.

Same, 11/165: Capt. Clement Conyers, 5th Regiment married Frances Snell, March, 1778.

Same, 13/90: James Conyers, Captain Continental Service, 5th Regiment, 10 June, 1776.

Same, 17/141: In a letter dated October 12, 1780 a Capt. Conyers is mentioned.

Same, 17/176-7: General Francis Marion, under date of 30 August, 1782, reports on the affair at Wadboo and mentions Capt. Conyers and his State Cavalry two times.

Same, 18/41: Capt. Conyers died in his 60th year—notice in the South Carolina Weekly Gazette, Saturday, May 31, 1783.

Same, 19/111: Capt. Clement Conyers, Jr., died at Bermuda, Wednesday, November 10, 1784.

Same, 35/115: Col. Peter Horry's Order Book, December 7, 1781 "Mr. Stran Conyers do join Capn. Withers Troops for the present to do duty as Cornet, and as such will be respected and obeyed."

Officers of the Continental Service-Heitman: Daniel Conyers (S. C.) Captain in Marion's Brigade, in 1781-82.

South Carolina during the Revolutionary War—by McGrady: 2/59: James Conyers, Major, signs for officers receiving articles of clothing in regiment of cavalry commanded by Lt. Col. Wade Hampton.

2/82: Daniel Conyers in Marion's Brigade.

2/639: Daniel Conyers, Major in new corps.

6V410: This book gives the descent of a John Conyers from three Barons who signed the Magna Charta; Eustace de Vesci, Robert de Ros and William D'Albini. The connection of this John Conyers with any of our John Conyers has not yet been established and no dates are given in the charts to follow. However, a "Jo: Conniers" was listed among "Persons of Quality" sailing for the Virginia plantations in 1634; a "Charles Conyers" was in Chowan County,

North Carolina, 1694/5 and a "James Conyers" was mentioned in 1697. It could be possible that they were related.

EUSTACE de VESCI-William de Vesci-William de Vesci-William de Vesci-Isabel de Vesci-Adam de Welles-Adam de Welles-John de Welles, John de Welles (married Eleanor de Mobray)-Margaret de Welles-Henry le Scrope of Upsol and Masham-Henry Fitz Hugh (married Joan de Scrope)-Henry Fitz Hugh (married Elizabeth de Grey).

ROBERT de ROS-William de ROS-William de Ros (married Isabel D'Albini).

WILLIAM D'ALBINI-William D'Albini-Isabel D'Albini (married Robert de Ros).

From Robert de Ros and Isabel D'Albini the line of descent is: William de Ros-Alice de Ros-Elizabeth de Meinill-Philip d'Arcy (married Elizabeth de Grey)-John d'Arcy (married Margaret de Grey)-Philip de Arcy (married Eleanor Fitz Hugh, daughter of Henry Fitz Hugh and Elizabeth de Grey, above)-Margaret d'Arcy (married John Conyers).

For other Magna Charta Barons see pages 173-181.

The data to follow on the Conyers Family has been compiled from the data under this surname which has been found in the South Carolina State Archives, Columbia, South Carolina, by Mr. Leonardo Andrea, Genealogist, 4204 Devine Street, Columbia, South Carolina.

Where the authority is not given in the individual paragraphs, the data is extracted from the Andrea compilation.

John Conyers, Land Grants from the Lords Proprietors of South Carolina:

"John Coniers had a war't for five hundred acres of land dated 27th Aprill An'o Dni. 1704."

"John Conniers had a warr't for 500 acres of land in Granville County dated Octob'r 25th, 1707."

Here we see the first Conyers' entries in South Carolina archives as John Conyers and he seems to be the first of the name in South Carolina.

From a study of the location of these two tracts of land they were located near the Savannah River in Purydburg Township near Briar Creek.

John Conyers and his brother, William (wife, Elizabeth—see ante) Conyers, received grants of land on or near Briar Creek, close to the Savannah River. (The Conyers Family of South Carolina and Georgia, in the D. A. R. Library, Washington, D. C.)

John Conyers married Mary Quarterman 5 July, 1717, and had issue: a. James Conyers, born 24 May, 1718; b. Elizabeth Honor Conyers, born 27 February, 1720. (The Conyers Family, etc., D. A. R. Library.)

James Conyers, Sr., married Mary McIntosh, 18 December, 1744. He was granted a large tract of land on the Black River, Craven District, South Carolina, in August, 1757. His will was recorded at Sumter, South Carolina, dated 5 March, 1783. They had: a. Major James Conyers; b. Captain Daniel Conyers; c. Straughan Conyers; d. Elizabeth Conyers; e. Mary Conyers; f. Sarah Conyers who married Daniel Carter (Conyers Family of South Carolina and Georgia, etc.). Their home was called "Brewington Manor" and there are many interesting legends about them.

The three sons of James Conyers, Sr., James, Jr., Daniel and Straughan, had distinguished records in the Revolutionary War. They are mentioned in: a. The Conyers Family of South Carolina and Georgia; b. History of South Carolina by Snowden; and c. South Carolina Historical and Genealogical Magazine.

James Conyers, Sr., Land Grants under the Crown:

James Conyers, 250 acres on north side of Black River, Craven, 2 August, 1757.

James Conyers, 150 acres in the Parish of St. Mark, Craven, 20 February, 1760.

James Conyers, 100 acres on the north side of Black River, Craven, March 4, 1760.

Memorial Tax Returns on land grants from the Crown: James Conyers III returns for land in above.

James Conyers, Sr.—File for many supplies furnished in 1781-82-83 for the Army of General Nathaniel Green—claim sworn to April 5, 1784, before James Mastin, J. P., for High Hills. By James (his X mark). (Descendants of

those furnishing supplies for the Revolutionary Army are eligible for membership in the D. A. R.)

Andrea says: I have seen many papers signed by James Conyers, Sr. He was likely very ill when he signed these papers by his "X" mark. I often note this in many papers. The person writes his name and later signs with his "X" mark. . . . Often the man was feeble and preferred to make his mark rather than to attempt to sign with a goose quill. Many papers show this James Conyers, Sr., signing his name.

Mrs. Mary Conyers' (widow of James Conyers, Sr.) home was about halfway between the Salem Black River Presbyterian Church and the Williamsburg Presbyterian Church at Kungstree. In September, 1801, there met at her home these men: John Witherspoon, John Witherspoon, Jr., Daniel Epps, Archibald Know, William McIntosh, Samuel Fleming, Thomas McFadden, John McFadden, Thomas Rhodus and organized a Presbyterian Church, Boddie's History of Williamsburg County, South Carolina.) This same history also says that James Conyers settled in Williamsburg sometime between 1736 and 1775.

Prince Frederick Church Register: Mary, daughter of John McIntosh and his wife, Mary, was baptized the 25th day of August, 1730. (Andrea says: Often children had to be taken to the Parish Church from a long way and they would be several years old when baptized. . . . I know the family of John McIntosh resided in what is now St. Mark Parish and it was some 75 miles or more from Prince Frederick Parish Church.)

James Conyers was married to Mary McIntosh the 18th day of December, 1744.

Wills: James Conyers of the High Hills and St. Mark's Parish . . . a will signed 5 March, 1783 . . . no proven date . . . two copies in State Archives . . . original in Camden, copy in Sumter, recorded in 1800 after latter county was formed . . . likely proved soon after 24 February, 1784 when he signed by his "X" mark the Revolutionary claim above. . . . Wife was Mary McIntosh. Mentions children: James; Daniel; Elizabeth and her husband, John Anderson;

Mary and her husband, Hugh Gamble; Sarah and her husband, Daniel Carter; Straughan.

James Conyers was aged 26 when he married Mary McIntosh.

In the Presbyterian Church at Manning, county seat of present Clarendon County, there is a large and beautiful memorial window to the Conyers Family. It was likely for Mrs. Mary Conyers, for it was at her home that this church was organized.

From the above it is probable that Sarah Conyers who married Daniel Carter was descended from the Conyers of Hornby Castle, of Yorkshire, England, and through John Conyers who married Mary Quarterman, 5 July, 1717, and had: James, born 1718, died prior to 5 March, 1783, who married Mary McIntosh on December 18, 1744, and had . . . Sarah, mentioned above.

On page 3, Benjamin Carter manuscript history of his family, appear these entries: a "... Mrs. — Anderson . . ." The above clears up her first name. And on same page: b. "... the other daughter . . ." The above clears up her name and that of her husband, i.e., Mary who married Hugh Gamble.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Conyers married Mary Quarterman and had
James² Conyers who married Mary McIntosh and had
Sarah³ Conyers who married Daniel⁵ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

CRAWFORD FAMILY

Crawford Family Records by William M. Clemens, 1914, page 3: Ardlock of Crawfordland in AYRSHIRE, Scotland, was the castellated seat of the great house of Crawford, which for centuries was associated with the chief events in Scottish History. Crawford is supposed, by antiquarians, to signify the road or passage—a crossing of blood—a bloody pass. Crawford castle stands on the right bank of the River Clyde, where it is supposed many bloody conflicts took place between the Romans and the Britons. The castle

was built at a remote period of antiquity and was the scene of one of the noble exploits of Sir William Wallace. According to George Crawford, author of the "Peerage of Scotland," 1716, the Crawfords were Caledonians, and derived their lineage from the old Earles of Richmond.

Reginald, the youngest son of Allen, fourth Earl of Richmond, was the extreme ancestor of the Crawfords. This Reginald de Crawford was surnamed "The Good" and was heritable Sheriff of Ayr. The office of High Sheriff of Ayr was long held by his family. Sir Reginald is sometimes called Sir "Ronald" de Crawford (page 4). . . . they were barons in those days and for centuries bore a conspicuous part in all the prominent events of Scottish History. When Scotland was a separate kingdom, the nobility, who were dukes, marquises, earls and lords, were by the King made hereditary barons of Parliament. Such were the Crawfords, who from this time or until the union with England, continued to be members of the Council of Barons who rule Scotland. At the union, when James II of Scotland became James I of England, they were still associated with the rulers of the Kingdom.

Reginald de Crawford, surnamed the "Good" was the great grandfather of Margaret Crawford, who married Malcolm Wallace and became the mother of Scotland's immortal hero, Sir William Wallace.

Same, page 8: There were many Crawfords who came to this country during the Colonial period both from Scotland and from Ireland. Probably the first of these colonists was John Crawford who was born in Ayrshire, Scotland, in 1600. His wife died in Scotland, leaving only one son, David, who was brought by his father, John, to Jamestown, Virginia. Page 9: John was killed in one of the fights during Bacon's Rebellion (1676).

David Crawford, born in Kilbirnie, Scotland, 1625, and lived in Virginia 1643 to 1710. He was in the House of Burgesses, 1690-92. (Journal of the House of Burgesses, 1659/60-1693, page 308, A.D. 1688; page 318, A.D. 1688; page 325, A.D. 1688; all show Captain Crawford present. Page 380, A.D. 1691, and page 386, A.D. 1692, both show

Mr. David Crawford present as member. Also, Crawford, Gen., by Mrs. L. F. Stephens, pages 9, 10, 12, 13.) David Crawford died in New Kent County, 1710. He was married at the age of 24 years—name of wife not known. He had: David and John.

David II, born in New Kent County, Virginia, 1662, died in same county, 1772, being 100 years of age. He married Elizabeth Smith in 1695. He was called Captain. They had six sons and five daughters. The sixth child was Mary, born 1703, died 1775, who married John Rodes. Mary was the daughter of "Good old Captain Crawford" in New Kent County, Virginia, who married Elizabeth Smith in Hanover County, Virginia, in 1695 and was the granddaughter of David Crawford, born 1625 in Kilbirnie, Scotland, who died in New Kent County, 1710; great-granddaughter of John Crawford, born 1600 in Kilbirnie, Scotland, and who was killed in 1676 in Virginia.

John and David were son and grandson of a cadet of the Kilbirnie Crawfords, who came to Virginia in 1643 "to improve their fortunes."

The husband of Mary (Crawford) Rodes was John Rodes who was born November 6, 1697, and died May 3, 1775, in Albemarle County, Virginia. (See Rodes Family.)

Page 17: Among recently discovered wills in Virginia records are the following: Crawford, David, Amherst County, Virginia. Will dated September 6, 1762. Sons: David, John. Daughters: Rhodes, Judith, Lucy and Martin's children.

Page 18: Crawford, David, Amherst County, Virginia. Will dated August 4, 1766. Six sons and five daughters. The sixth child was Mary, born in March 1703, and married John Rodes.

Line of Descent:

David¹ Crawford had

David² Crawford who married Elizabeth Smith and had

Mary³ Crawford who married John² Rodes and had

John³ Rodes who married Sarah⁵ Harris and had

Tyree⁴ Rodes who married Cynthia³ Holland and had
Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes who married John Harper⁴ Rivers
and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷
Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

DALE FAMILY

“Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter” by Dr. Joseph
Lyon Miller, of Thomas, West Virginia, 1912: The Dale
Family were among the Royalists who sought refuge in
Virginia after the death of King Charles I and the Edward
Dale Family was of the ancient Dale Family of Northamp-
ton and London.

Same, page 17: William Dale, Esq., of Brigstook, Nor-
thampton (England), had his arms confirmed in 1613. He
was the third son of Robert Dale, Esq., of Wencle, in the
County of Chester, whose first and second sons were Robert,
Jr., of Wencle and Roger of Inner Temple, London. Edward
Dale was probably the son of one of these.

17V196: Major Edward Dale’s wife was Diana Skip-
with, sister of Sir Grey Skipwith, second son of Sir Henry
Skipwith, Bart., of Prestwold, Leicestershire, whose ances-
try goes back in unbroken line to the time of the Conqueror
and Major Dale was probably a member of the ancient fam-
ily of Dale of Northampton and London as he used the same
arms.

Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter, page 18: December
18, 1674, “Edward Dale of County of Lancaster in Virginia,
Gentl., as well and in consideration of a marriage already
had and solemnized between Thomas Carter of same county,
Mercht., of the one part and Katherine, his wife, dau. of mee
the aforesaid Edward Dale.” His wife was Diana Skip-
with.

A full account of the SKIPWITH Family may be found
in Burke’s Peerage, Baronetage, and Knighthood, 1898, page
1266. They were descended from Robert de Estouteville,
Baron of Nottingham in the time of the Conqueror. (See
Skipwith Family.)

17W(1)199: Edward Dale and Diana Skipwith Dale (one of the two daughters of Sir Henry Skipwith, Bart., Prestwould, Leicestershire, England, and his wife, Amy, who was daughter and co-heir of Sir Thomas Kempe, Knt.), were the parents of two daughters who grew to maturity: 1. Katherine, who married Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr., prior to 1674.

17W(1)196: Major Edward Dale from 1655 to 1674, Clerk of Lancaster Court, 19 years; Justice of the County 14 years; High Sheriff, 4 years; House of Burgesses, 2 years. In Colonial days the clerk was probably the most important office after the County Lieutenant, and besides belonging to the local gentry, was one of the leading men of his county.

Same, page 198: In all his deeds and papers he was always styled "Edward Dale, Gentleman"—a title in the Seventeenth Century which was defined with legal precision and its use not permitted to anyone who had not the right to it.

Same, 196-202: Major Dale, High Sheriff, Lancaster County, 1670, 1671, 1679, 1680.

10V236: Major Edward Dale, first clerk, Westmoreland County, 1652-1662. Burgess, Lancaster County, 1677, 1683. (Journal of House of Burgesses, 1659/60-1693, pages IX, 110.)

10V250: Military Officer, Lancaster County, 1699.

"Descendants of Capt. Thomas Carter," page 14: The old records show that in the years 1670, 1671, 1679, 1680 Major Edward Dale was High Sheriff of Lancaster. In November, 1677, and January, 1683, Major Dale was Burgess for Lancaster County. In addition (page 15) to his offices in Lancaster County, Major Dale was first clerk of Westmoreland County between 1652 and 1662, running the office with the help of a deputy.

Same, page 18: Edward Dale's wife was Diana Skipwith. His last will and testament made August 4, 1694, Lancaster County: "My body to the Earth whence it came to be decently interred without any wine drinking."

Same, pages 19-20: Has a long list of books in his estate showing that he was a man of unusual education for that time. Some of the books were: Holy Bible, Prayer Book, etc., Virginia Laws, Works of Spencer, Sermons for all the Sundays in the Year, The Whole Duty of Man, Shakespeare's Works, Kings of England, Practice of Physick, General History of France.

Line of Descent:

Edward¹ Dale married Diana¹³ Skipwith and had

Katherine² Dale who married Capt. Thomas¹ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

DANIEL FAMILY

History of Caroline County, Virginia, page 76: Colonial and Land Grants of 1,000 acres to William Daniel, Jr., October 17, 1754.

6W(2)196: Hayden (Genealogist) says that he found the Daniel pedigree the most difficult to handle of any in his book; it is still difficult. The writer (Hayden) has not definitely placed this William Daniel. The habitat of the family was "across the river" in Stafford County. On December 17, 1754, as William Daniel, Jr., he patented 1,000 acres of land in Caroline County, Virginia (Virginia County Records, 1/31). As he appears as William, Jr., the inference is that his father bore the same name. The wife of William Daniel was Elizabeth Coleman. Spilsby Coleman, who died unmarried in his will dated March 23, 1757, and probated May 3, same year, leaves legacies to . . . his brother-in-law, William Daniel. . . . Who the father of Spilsby and Elizabeth (Coleman) was seems uncertain—whether Robert or Samuel. (See Coleman Family.)

12T249: William Daniel, son-in-law of Robert Williams, has been referred to as probably a grandson of Hugh Daniel of Richmond County, Virginia. William Daniel, Sr.'s, last will and testament was produced in Court (Caroline County Order Book) on July 10, 1765, by William Daniel, Jr., and Thomas Daniel, Executors. He had: a. Sarah; b. William, referred to after 1734 and prior to 1764 as William, Jr.

Last reference to him was on November 9, 1775, when he sold 613 acres to John Dickinson. On tax returns after 1782 his land was assessed to wife and two sons. He married before 1747, Elizabeth, sister of Spilsby Coleman and his wife, Elizabeth. They had at least four children: William, James, Harrison and Tabitha Ann.

Sarah Daniel, above, married James Lindsay, February 16, 1720. (See Lindsay Family.) William Daniel gave James Lindsay, "my son-in-law," 116 acres purchased of William Berry.

In the notes on the Coleman Family, Spilsby Coleman had a sister, Elizabeth, who was still a spinster in 1771, whereas the will of William Daniel, Sr., was produced in court July 10, 1765. Spilsby Coleman died in 1757, unmarried, and leaves a will in which he referred to William Daniel as his brother-in-law. It is quite difficult to reconcile statements in the Daniel and Coleman families as to this Elizabeth. And since Sarah, daughter of William Daniel, Sr., married James Lindsay before 1728 and had a son born August 27, 1728, it is further confusing as to "Elizabeth."

Line of Descent:

William¹ Daniel had

William² Daniel who married Elizabeth⁴ Coleman and had

Sarah³ Daniel who married James² Lindsay and had
John³ Lindsay who married Mary² Masterson and had
John⁴ Lindsay who married Sarah³ Kearney and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

DAWSON FAMILY

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 219: Henry Dawson came to Virginia with three sons, John, Thomas and William with William Claiborne in 1691. (The text says 1691) but this is obviously an error if they came with William Claiborne, as the latter was first noticed in Virginia in 1621, and since William Dawson, son, patented land in Virginia in 1635 (page 217) and sold in 1637, and in 1664

this same William Dawson and wife, Joan, sold land to Edward Miller, and in 1683 William Boddie (page 218) let to Henry Dawson, his wife and four children, certain lands for which the rent was "2 yards of Indian corn yearly," and in 1703 (page 218) William Boddie sold the land on which the Widow Dawson lived, it is evident that the year 1691 must be wrong.)

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 618: In 1637 John Dawson was a planter with his brother, William, in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, and Henry Dawson was in Isle of Wight County in 1658. Latter was the son either of John or William above and was living as late as 1693. Henry married Martha Martin, sister of Henry Martin. She died after 1683.

Henry Dawson who died prior to 1698 and Martha, his wife, had: a. William; b. John; c. Thomas. William married Joan —, and it is not known what became of him. John proved, in 1698 (page 525), his transportation to the Colony. John married prior to 1707 as (page 525) in that year he made an assignment deed with the consent of his wife, Mary (NCH&GR 1/92.) His will was made November 22, 1748, in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, in which he mentions his son, John, and Executrix, Mary.

John was the father of John Dawson who (page 218) married the widow of his landlord's son, John Boddie, "soon after the death of the last-named in 1720" (CRNC 25/352 and Abstract of Wills, 1647-1800, Isle of Wight County, Book 2, page 4), and moved to Northampton County, North Carolina, about 1732. The name of this widow was Elizabeth (or Mary) Thomas as Barnaby Thomas (page 525) refers to John Dawson in 1735 as his brother-in-law. (See Thomas Family.)

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, 1647-1800, Book 2, page 4: Will of John Boddie dated April 25, 1720, mentions son, John, and wife, Elizabeth, Executrix.

Now, since Barnaby Thomas mentions, in his will, his brother-in-law, John Dawson, this brings in the Thomas Family, which is recorded elsewhere. In the Thomas Family we find an Elizabeth Thomas who married, first, John

Boddie and, second, John Dawson. This Elizabeth Thomas had several brothers, one of whom was Barnaby mentioned above. (See Thomas Family.) John Boddie and Elizabeth Thomas had: a. William Boddie who married Mary Bennett and b. John Boddie who married Elizabeth Jeffries. (See Jeffries Family.) After John Boddie's death, his widow, Elizabeth, married John⁴ Pope.

Note: Authorities differ on whether John Dawson's wife was Elizabeth or Mary, but all agree that she was the widow of John Boddie. She may have had both names.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 219: Says Henry Dawson of Breedon, Leicestershire, England.

Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina, page 7: Robert Dawson was a member of the second charter granted to Virginia, 1609.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, page 658: William Dawson, 150 acres of land in Isle of Wight County, 3 November, 1635.

Same, page 162-163: Henry Dawson, one of the signers of a petition submitted as a result of the "inquiries into the grievances of His Majesty's subjects," 1676/77.

Same, page 218: June 9, 1703, John Boddie sold land "where Martha Dawson, widow (of Henry), and three sons, Henry, John and Martin, lived."

Same, page 218: Henry Dawson held 200 acres and John Dawson 300 acres in Warwick County, 1704.

Same, page 352: John Boddie, son of Elizabeth and William Boddie, born Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1685. Died at an early age in 1720. He married Elizabeth Thomas who survived him and afterwards married Colonel John Dawson of North Carolina. Elizabeth died circa 1752. John Boddie's will dated 10 March, 1719/20, probated 25 April, 1720.

NCH&GR 2/92: John Dawson acquires 100 acres from Frances Pugh, October 23, 1728, Chowan County, North Carolina.

Same, Vol. 1, page 113: John Dawson, 380 acres on north side of Flat Cypress Swamp, Chowan County, March 23, 1733/34.

Same, 1/92: Under "Conveyances," John Dawson with consent of my wife, Mary, April Court, 1707, Chowan County.

History of Halifax County, North Carolina, page 10: About 1730 land grants received by Henry Dawson and John Dawson.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 218: John Dawson married the widow of his landlord's son shortly after the death of the last named in 1720. They, with John Boddie's two young sons, John and William, moved to Northampton County, North Carolina, about 1732, where John Dawson became representative in the General Assembly, 1734, and later became member of the Governor's Council; a Justice of the Supreme Court, and Colonel of the Northampton Regiment in the Spanish alarm of 1748. He died in 1762.

Henry Dawson, eldest son by his first wife, was a member of the General Assembly from 1766 until his death in 1770. John Dawson's son by his second wife, Charity Alston, represented Northampton County in the House of Commons, 1780-83, and Halifax County, 1787-98.

Colonel John Dawson, Northampton County, North Carolina, married, first, Mary Thomas, widow of John Boddie; married, second, Charity Alston. His will was dated 1763 (error?) and probated February Court, 1762.

Marriages, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1628-1800, page 15: John Dawson and Mrs. Elizabeth Boddie, Relict of John Boddie, 1738. (This must be an error. If he married Elizabeth Boddie "soon after the death" of John Boddie and moved to North Carolina about 1732, he probably married her circa 1728.)

Same, page 525: December 11, 1735, Barnaby Thomas refers to John Dawson as his brother-in-law. From these, it is evident that he married Mary, sister of Barnaby and Philip Thomas, who bore him children: a. Henry, wife

Patience, and several children; b. daughter, Mary, who married William Kinchen.

Same, page 527: John Dawson, 1738 and 1740, was a member of the General Assembly from Bertie. Appointed Justice of the County and then Sheriff. His name continues with intervals as member of the Assembly until 1754. His will was proven Northampton Court, February, 1762.

Same, page 708: John Dawson and William Kinchen, Justices of the Peace, Bertie County, North Carolina, 1739.

Same, page 708: John Dawson, representative in General Assembly, North Carolina, from Northampton County, 1745, 1747-49.

Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 352: Elizabeth, first wife of Col. John Dawson, died circa 1752.

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 527: After his wife's death, John Dawson married Charity Alston, whose first child was born 1756.

CRNC 25/241: John Dawson appointed on Commission to lay out town in Northampton County, 1749.

CRNC 25/286: All tax monies for Counties of Edgecombe, Northampton and Granville to be paid . . . John Dawson. . . .

CRNC 4/384: John Dawson appointed to Committee of Claims of Assembly, 8 February, 1738 (-39).

NCH&GR 2/308: Colonel John Dawson died in Northampton County, North Carolina, 1761. He was Justice of the Peace, 1739, Bertie County. Daughter, Mary, married William Kinchen. His first wife was probably named Mary. John Dawson's second wife, Charity, died in Northampton County, 1764. Mentions her "true and trusty friend, Thomas Kearney."

CRNC 22/273, 274, 309, 313: John Dawson, Colonel of Militia.

Line of Descent:

Henry¹ Dawson had

Henry² Dawson who married Martha and had

John³ Dawson who married Mary and had

Col. John⁴ Dawson who married Mary Thomas and had

Mary⁵ Dawson who married William² Kinchen and had

Elizabeth³ Kinchen who married Philip² Kearney and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

GILBERT FAMILY

CRNC 12/666: William Gilbert resided in North Carolina from 1760 to 1790. He died at Gilbert Town, Tryon County, North Carolina. He was born in 1735. Was in the Assembly.

History of old Tryon and Rutherford Counties, North Carolina, pages 71-72: Gives much detail about William Gilbert. He was Justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarterly Sessions, Tryon County, 1781-82-83-84. On October 25, 1775, he signed the "Association Oath" stating their firm intention of sustaining both the Continental and Provisional Congresses. He died at Gilbert Town, 1790. Location of grave unknown. His wife died December 22, 1822, having been born in 1737. She is buried where her son-in-law, Major James Holland, settled at "Holland's Ferry" or ford on Duck River, Fourth District, Maury County, Tennessee. Gilbert had entered a tract of 5,000 acres in that locality but never moved to Tennessee. He was a Presbyterian in religion. His wife, Sarah McCandless, was of a Scotch-Irish family in southeast Pennsylvania and he was a Scotch-Irish immigrant.

Page 42: Gilbert was representative from Tyron County, 1778.

Page 52: Gilbert was representative from Rutherford County in House of Commons, 1779.

Page 84: Same when the Assembly met in Hillsboro, 1782.

Page 55: Major Ferguson of the British Army, with his command, camped on Gilbert's property at Gilbert Town prior to the battle of King's Mountain and had engagements with North Carolina troops in that vicinity.

American Historical Magazine, 3/260 et seq.: William Gilbert, Justice of the Court of Pleas and Quarterly Sessions, July, 1775, 1777, 1778. Assessor of taxes and collector of taxes. January, 1779, represented Tryon County in the House of Commons. On February 8, 1779, he was expelled from the House and forced to resign his commission as Justice of the Peace. He denied his guilt and was again the representative from the new Rutherford County in 1780, 1782 and 1783. In 1781 again appointed Justice of the Peace. He died at Gilbert Town in 1790; location of grave unknown. He was a large landowner. He was Commissioner of the Peace up to 1776 of old Tryon County. Tax Assessor and Commissioner of the Peace, new county of Rutherford. In House 1780-82-83. Member of North Carolina Legislature at Newbern and colonel in Revolutionary War and Elder in the Presbyterian Church.

Same 1/94: The daughter of William and Sarah McCandless Gilbert, Sarah, married James Holland, January 12, 1780. (This is also mentioned in a manuscript in writer's possession.) (See Holland Family.)

From an undated and unsigned manuscript in feminine handwriting in the writer's possession is extracted the following reference William Gilbert: "Colonel William Gilbert was 2 years old when his parents left Ireland and settled in Charlestown, Massachusetts. He married Miss Sarah McCandless of Pennsylvania (her Mother's maiden name was either Houston or Irving). When William Gilbert asked Mr. McCandless for his daughter he refused, saying that he was too poor. She then consented to give him up provided he would not compel her to marry anyone else, but afterwards her father insisted that she should marry a wealthy bachelor in the neighborhood. The wedding arrangements were completed; the guests assembled; but the bride, appareled, instead of meeting the expectant guests and a waiting groom at her Father's house, walked through the garden gate (the trunk having been sent before) to a neighbor on the opposite side of the street, and there became the wife of William Gilbert. (Mrs. Gilbert informed her children of the circumstances of this marriage when

they grew up. Her daughter, Mrs. Holland, also told her children after they were grown.) Mrs. Gilbert never saw her parents, sisters or brothers again. They left immediately for the 'Wilderness of North Carolina.' And soon a manufacturing town was built up by the energy of Colonel Gilbert and was called Gilbert Town. To obtain the labor of skilled workmen from Europe he would pay their passage to this country, they repaying him by their labor for a certain number of years (generally two years). His daughter, Mrs. Holland, often spoke of her Father 'buying the Irish.' He was a large landowner and owned herds of cattle. His name is in the history of North Carolina as a member of the Legislature at Newbern; he was also a Colonel in the Revolutionary War and he was an Elder in the Presbyterian Church; and it was said that the unmarried clergymen of that Church, of their acquaintance, would first endeavor to win one of the Elder's daughters in marriage before asking elsewhere. Mrs. Gilbert was also a Presbyterian in faith, she was rigid in the observance of the Sabbath Day, would read her Testaments, and converse but little on that day.

Colonel Gilbert moved to Charleston, South Carolina, and lived in great luxury and elegance. His wife dressed in the richest brocades and silk, her hair dressed daily by a Frenchman. They became in debt and sold a large part of their property to pay them; for a short time they took boarders, but told their family that it was one of the most unsatisfactory ways of making a living and would not advise anyone to pursue it.

Colonel Gilbert was very handsome and so pleasant in his deportment that "his worst enemy would meet him with a smile." He had a large family of children, but several died in Charleston, until it was almost an opinion of their daughter, Mrs. Holland, that "a child could hardly be raised in that city." Their daughter, Sarah, married James Holland and their other daughter married Robert Prince, and some of their descendants live in Louisiana and Mississippi. One of Colonel Gilbert's daughters married Philip Alston of Mississippi, and died early. John Gilbert, another son,

was called upon by the Sheriff to assist in arresting a desperate criminal and, in an attempt to save his own life, killed the man. The relatives threatened to avenge his death, so at the age of nineteen years John became a refugee from home. His body was afterwards found murdered in Claiborne, Alabama. Israel Pickens, the Governor of the State, offered a large reward for the murderers, but none were found. Alexander Gilbert lived with his mother and died unmarried.

Colonel Gilbert did not live to be old. After his death his widow was often solicited in marriage, so that she was called the "belle of three states." She had an uncommon intellect and was well educated. Her mind and body were vigorous as long as she lived. She died at the age of eighty-two years. She was at supper, as cheerful and appeared as well as usual, ate her supper of milk and mush. In the morning she was found dead in her bed."

This manuscript mentions during the Revolutionary War about the Tories trying to get some Whig guns from her house and of an English officer being in her house after being wounded at King's Mountain, being killed by Whig youths of the neighborhood.

Line of Descent:

William¹ Gilbert married Sarah¹ McCandless and had Sarah² Gilbert who married James² Holland and had Cynthia³ Holland who married Tyree⁴ Rodes and had Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes who married John Harper⁴ Rivers and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter and had

Myra Belle⁸ Carter who married Gustavus A.⁷ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

HARRIS FAMILY

Colonial and Revolutionary Lineages of America, 4/397: Captain Thomas Harris of Charles City, Virginia, the first of this line of record, was born in England about 1583 and died in Charles City, Virginia. He came to Virginia in the "Prosperous" in May, 1611, and first settled in Hen-

rico County. He married Adria Osborne, daughter of Thomas Osborne. She arrived in the "Marmaduke" in November, 1621. This was Thomas' first marriage. They had: Robert, born in 1635, died in 1701; married Mary Claiborne Rice.

The Harris Family of Virginia, 1611-1914, page 8: He (Thomas Harris) came to Virginia with Thomas Osborne in 1611 and settled on lands now in Henrico County. He was second in command with Thomas Osborne in the long war with the Indians in 1622. He was a member of the House of Burgesses, 1623-1639-1647 (Journal of the House of Burgesses, 1659/60-1693, page vi, Thomas Harris, member for Neck of Land, 1623; page vii, Member for Henrico, 1639/40; page viii, Member for Henrico, 1647/48). He married Adria Osborne, and from this marriage descended Major Robert Harris, who married the widow Rice.

Same, page 9: Thomas Harris, Gent., was captain in the Indian Wars and married Adria Osborne. His son, Robert Harris, married the widow Rice, who was Mary Claiborne, youngest daughter of Colonel William Claiborne, first Secretary of the Virginia Colony. His (Claiborne's) wife was Elizabeth Bristow. (Others say that her name was Buller, with which I agree.)

History of Louisa County, Virginia, page 348: Major Robert Harris was the son of Captain Thomas and Adria (Osborne) Harris, born circa 1615. He came to Virginia circa 1650 and married Mary Claiborne Rice, widow of Edward Rice and daughter of Colonel William Claiborne of King William County. They lived in New Kent County, that part later being Hanover County, at the "Forks," which indicates that they were near the junction of North and South branches of the Pamunky River.

The Harris Family, Etc., page 9: Claiborne Pedigree by G. M. Claiborne, 1V313; The Gentry Family of America, by Richard Gentry, page 64: Robert Harris, born in Wales in 1635, died at the "Forks," Hanover County, Virginia, 1701.

The Gentry Family of America, pages 60, 228-229: Robert Harris, the immigrant, father of William Harris, came

to Virginia from England (probably from Wales) between 1650 and 1660. In 1660 he married Mrs. Mary Rice, a widow, who was formerly Miss Mary Claiborne, daughter of William Claiborne, first Secretary of the Colony of Virginia. Their son, William Harris, married Temperance Overton, daughter of William Overton of Glen Cairn, Hanover County, Virginia. (See Overton Family.)

William and Temperance Overton were the parents of Robert Harris. William was a vestryman in Fredericksville Parish, Virginia, for a number of years before his death in 1765.

Robert Harris and his wife, Mourning Glenn, had eleven children—the ninth, Sarah, born May 24, 1736, died January 31, 1803; married Captain John Rodes, born November 16, 1729, son of John Rodes and Mary Crawford of Virginia, on May 24, 1756.

Colonel William Claiborne, first Secretary of the Colony of Virginia, was the father of Mary Claiborne Harris, wife of Robert Harris. He came from England to Virginia in 1621 with Sir Francis Wyatt when he was first appointed governor. He (Claiborne) held many important offices. The Claiborne pedigree traces the family back to the beginning of the Thirteenth Century. (See Claiborne Family.)

William Harris, born "WEYANOKE" on the James River, 1652, died same place May 8, 1687. Married December 24, 1670, Temperance Overton, born March 2, 1679. Reference: William Harris bronze tablet removed from Old Colonial Church, WEYANOKE, July 1, 1875, to Old St. Paul's Church, Norfolk, Virginia. Engraved on it is "Here lyeth ye body of Wm. Harris, departed this life ye 8th day of May, 1687, age 35 years."

History of Louisa County, page 348: Captain (later Colonel) William Harris, son of Robert and Mary C. Harris, born circa 1730. He married Temperance Overton, daughter of William and Mary Waters Overton of Hanover County. She was born March 2, 1679, died February 10, 1716 (Tombstone, Hanover County).

The Harris Family of Virginia, Etc.:

Page 15: William Overton, born December 3, 1639, married Mary Waters on November 24, 1670. He emigrated from England to Hanover County about 1682. His son, William, married Peggy Garland, and they had Temperance, who married Colonel Robert Harris.

Page 9: William Harris, son of this Robert Harris, married Temperance Overton. She was five years younger and was the daughter of William Overton, whose wife was Peggy Garland.

Page 14: The son of William and Temperance Harris was Robert who married Mourning Glenn.

Page 12: The will of Robert Harris, second son of William and grandson of Major Robert Harris and Mary Claiborne Harris, was dated June 18, 1765. His sons-in-law were executors, namely, John Rodes and William Shelton. The Rodes of Giles County, Tennessee, were descended from the son-in-law of Robert Harris.

The Gentry Family in America; Claiborne Pedigree; Booklet on Harris Family by Mrs. Mary Vaughn in Tennessee State Library and Albemarle County Will Book No. 2, page 185: Colonel Robert Harris born Hanover County, Virginia, 1686, died Albemarle County, Virginia, 1765. Married Albemarle County, Virginia, January 13, 1720, Mourning Glenn, born Albemarle County, 1702, died Albemarle County, Virginia, 1770. He, Robert Harris, was chosen Burgess for the Assembly, 1734-1740 (Journals of the House of Burgesses of Virginia 1727-1734-1736-1740). He resigned as Member of the House of Burgesses to accept appointment by the King as Surveyor for the new county of Louisa, which was cut off from Hanover County and organized in 1742. He afterwards removed to Albemarle County, Virginia, and was one of the first settlers on Doule's River. (History of Albemarle County, by E. Woods, page 221.) His will bears date of June 18, 1765, probated August 8, 1765, and recorded in Albemarle County Will Book No. 2, page 185.

History of Louisa County, Virginia, page 355: Major Robert Harris, son of Captain William and Temperance Overton Harris, was born in St. Peter's Parish, New Kent

County, 1696. (Note difference of 10 years in date of birth from above.) He was the first surveyor of Louisa County in 1742 and had been Burgess from Hanover. He married Mourning Glenn about 1720. His home was in Albemarle County and he was Vestryman in Fredericksville Parish. His will is recorded in Albemarle County Records, Will Book 3, page 165 (1765). Children . . . Sarah . . . born May 24, 1736, married John Rodes.

American Historical Magazine, Vol. 4, page 44: Vestry Book of Fredericksville Parish, Louisa County Virginia, 1742 to 1787. At a vestry meeting held at the Church below the Mountains, September 25, 1765, John Rodes appointed a vestryman in the room of Robert Harris, deceased.

Same: 27 June, 1753, Tyree Harris, Vestryman, in the room of Robert Harris, Gent., he having removed out of the Parish.

Sarah Harris married John Rodes and became the mother of Tyree Rodes of Albemarle County, Virginia. Later was one of the Commissioners who laid out the town of Pulaski, Tennessee. See Acts, Tennessee Legislature, November 14, 1827. Tyree Rodes was Justice of the Peace in Giles County, Tennessee, and is buried where he settled, six miles north of Pulaski, Tennessee, at "Clifton Place."

The Rodes Family Bible, 1829, in the possession of the writer says: "Major Robert Harris' wife was Mourning Glenn. He was the son of William Harris and Temperance Overton, his wife. William Harris was the son of Robert Harris and his wife, Mary Rice Claiborne, who was the daughter of William Claiborne and Elizabeth Buller, his wife."

"Genesis of the United States" by Brown says that Capt. Thomas Harris may have been a son of Sir William Harris of Crixith and Woodham-Mortemar, Essex, England.

Line of Descent:

Thomas¹ Harris married Adria² Osborne and had Robert² Harris who married Mary² Claiborne and had William³ Harris who married Temperance⁴ Overton and had

Robert⁴ Harris who married Mourning Glenn and had

Sarah⁵ Harris who married John³ Rodes and had
 Tyree⁴ Rodes who married Cynthia³ Holland and had
 Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes who married John Harper⁴ Rivers
 and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷
 Carter and had

Myra Belle⁸ Carter who married Gustavus A.⁷ Pope.
 (See Pope Line.)

HARRISON FAMILY

History of Old Tryon and Rutherford Counties, North Carolina, p. 117 et seq.: Major James Holland was the son of William and Mary (Harrison) Holland. William Holland emigrated to North Carolina from England in 1725.

In an unsigned, undated manuscript in feminine handwriting in the writer's possession is extracted the following: "William Holland was an English nobleman. He had traveled over the continent of Europe with his tutor and then came to America and married Miss May Harrison, a sister of the signer of the Declaration of Independence. She was of fine English parentage as is shown in the printed life of her brother."

I have not found the "printed life of her brother" as mentioned above. This "Signer" was Benjamin⁵ Harrison. I have searched 30 or more books trying to locate this May but without success.

In 32V98, 101, I found the will of Benjamin⁴ Harrison, the father of the Signer. In his will he mentions four daughters: Betty, Anne, Lucy and Hannah. No mention of May (or Mary).

30V408: There were numerous Harrison families in the State (Virginia) not at all related to each other.

6T206: "Benjamin Harrison of Cumberland County but lately (1754) removed from Richmond County. His will dated February 23, 1761, mentions his children: . . . (4) Mary . . . (9) Benjamin. His wife, Priscilla.

7V357: Will of Mary Harrison, widow of Nathaniel Harrison, Surry County, February 25, 1732–March 21, 1732. One of her daughters was named Mary.

28V164: Mary Harrison, daughter of Henry Harrison, Brunswick County, Virginia. Will April 14, 1786, proved June 21, 1786. Evidently died unmarried.

So, the writer has been unable to identify the parents of the May (or Mary) Harrison who married William Holland, nor has the date of the marriage been found.

7V324: The Hollands were not of Halifax County, North Carolina (as was stated elsewhere), but of "Gilbert Town," Rutherford County, North Carolina, and afterwards of Maury County, Tennessee.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 251: There were many Harrisons in North Carolina not connected with the Virginia Harrisons. The former came from Virginia to North Carolina.

Line of Descent:

Since the ancestry of Mary Harrison who married William¹ Holland has not been proved, no descent is given.

HOLLAND FAMILY

From an undated and unsigned manuscript in feminine handwriting in possession of the writer the following is extracted: "William Holland received large sums of gold from England several times and from having a large estate reduced by selling his property for Continental money to a man who knew it was valueless. The fraud was soon discovered, but too late to regain his property. He had seven sons and one daughter and during the Revolutionary War the sons were all on the Whig side, and he would visit them in their camp and say to them: 'King George will whip you all.' He was indolent in business, was a handsome man, was grave and dignified in appearance, was a member of the Church of England and often read his prayer book. His wife instructed her children in all the branches of learning with which she was acquainted. She was a highly-educated lady. James was one of the youngest sons of the family and determined to be educated and to work to pay for it, so at the age of 15 years he hired to a carpenter to learn the trade. This offended the father, who considered

that kind of labor a degradation and each year took the money and kept it until he was 21 years of age. He then handed the same money to him and said: 'Take it, my son, and in God's name do the best you can for yourself.' James became head of the family, and he desired him to go to England to take possession of his estate (he, William Holland, regretting that his past neglect was now too old to go). The voyage was then made in not less than a year and the time of absence uncertain and James declined to go. His father was greatly disappointed, saying that he was the only one who could attend to his business."

American Historical Magazine, 1/294: William Holland and his wife had: James Holland (born circa 1754, died May 19, 1823) who was sheriff of old Tryon County, North Carolina, before the division of this county in 1779, from July, 1777, to July, 1778; second lieutenant, Hardin's Company, Locke's Regiment, North Carolina Militia; after the Revolutionary War was in the State Senate, 1783 and 1797 and in the House, 1786 and 1789; in Congress, March, 1795, to March 1797, and from 1801 to 1811. Died 1823. Born about 1754 in Tryon County, North Carolina, and lived in Rutherfordton. Major in Revolutionary War. Moved to Tennessee, 1807 (it was actually 1811—see later). James Holland married Sarah Gilbert, January 12, 1780. (See Gilbert Family.)

Officers of the Continental Army, Heitman: HOLLAND, James (North Carolina), Lieutenant and Captain, North Carolina Militia.

3V328: James Holland emigrated to Tennessee in 1811.

History of Old Tryon and Rutherford Counties, North Carolina:

Page 117: James Holland born in that section of Anson County, North Carolina which later became Mecklenburg, then Tryon, then Rutherford. He was a large landowner, a slave holder and followed agricultural pursuits. On November 26, 1776, by act of the Provisional Congress, he was named a second lieutenant in Capt. Joseph Hardin's Company, Colonel Francis Locke's Regiment, North Carolina Militia. (Also in CRNC 10/931, 937.) Locke's Regi-

ment defeated the Tories at Ramsuer's Mill, near Lincolntown, June 20, 1780, but there is no record indicating Holland's military service or record there. He was allowed £11, s3 for service in that connection (Book A, entry 6908, Auditor's Office, Raleigh). After the war he was in the State Senate 1783 and 1797 and in the House of Commons 1786 and 1789. Elected member of the first Board of Trustees, University, and served (page 114) from 1789 to 1795.

Page 41: James Holland, Sheriff, Tryon County, 1777.

Page 46: James Holland, Sheriff, Tryon County, July, 1777–July, 1778.

Page 85: James Holland, elected County Commissioner, Rutherford County, July, 1782.

Page 86: James Holland, Representative from Rutherford County, North Carolina, in Senate, 1783.

Page 127: James Holland, admitted to bar, 1793, in Rutherford County, October 15th.

Page 127: James Holland, Representative in Senate from Rutherford County, North Carolina, 1797.

Pages 106, 107: James Holland, Justice of the Peace, Rutherford County, 1784 and 1785.

Page 108: James Holland, Representative from Rutherford County in the House when the Legislature met in Fayetteville, November 20, 1786, to January 6, 1787.

Page 129: James Holland received 128 votes for Congress from Rutherford County to 42 votes for Joseph McDowell, his opponent.

Page 151: Tennessee being a new country, land could be secured cheaply which was an inducement to some who could secure it for services in the Revolution. Among those who left the county were James Holland and his family. This was about 1811.

Page 117: Member of the second North Carolina Constitutional Convention which adopted the Federal Constitution in 1789 and was Representative in Congress from 1795 to 1797 and from 1801 to 1811. In January, 1780, he married Sarah Gilbert, daughter of William Gilbert of Gilbert Town, North Carolina, the marriage bond being dated Jan-

uary 12, 1780. During his last term in Congress, his oldest son, William Blount Holland, had been sent with his effects and negroes to open a settlement on his land grant on Duck River, Maury County, Tennessee. This removal was about the winter of 1808-1809. William Blount Holland died at the new settlement, June 16, 1810, the first burial in the new graveyard there. Major Holland served his last term as U. S. Congressman from North Carolina in 1809-1811, after a partial removal of his effects and family to his Tennessee settlement. He contemplated an earlier removal, but being taunted by some unfriendly to him, that his removal was timely, he accepted the challenge, announced his candidacy, and was once more elected. In 1812, Major Holland was named a Justice of the Peace for Maury County, Tennessee, and served in that capacity until about January, 1818. In 1821, he was an unsuccessful candidate for Congress from that district.

He acquired a large tract of land in Maury County. His first tract lay on both sides of Duck River, at the mouth of Fountain Creek, and the Gilbert (father-in-law) grant embraced both sides of Fountain Creek. These were "Treasury," not "service" grants. By tradition in Tennessee and western North Carolina he was called "Major" Holland. It is not known that he served in that capacity during the Revolution, but he was appointed first major in the militia in the Morgan (North Carolina) District in 1787, which probably gave him this title.

Major Holland is buried nine miles east of Columbia, Tennessee, near Groveland, in what is now known as the Watson Cemetery, although it was for many years known as the Holland Cemetery. His grave has a box-like tomb over it and the inscription on the slab follows: "In memory of Major James Holland, who was born A.D. 1754 and departed this life on the 19th of May, 1823, in his seventieth year. He served his country in a military and civil capacity throughout the war of American Independence and was afterwards for many years a member of the Legislature of North Carolina and a representative in Congress from that state. In 1811 he retired to private life with

great popularity and weight of character after an arduous and faithful service of 37 years." This is followed by a "moralizing" epitaph. This moralizing epitaph has been copied by the writer and it follows: "In public relations he was a good husband, parent, master, neighbor and friend, was kind and hospitable to the poor and strangers and ever admired that precept in morality and religion which saith, 'As ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.' "

Major Holland's widow, born December 26, 1764, died September 10, 1841, and is buried at Tuscaloosa, Alabama.

Major Holland was long known in Western North Carolina as "Big Jim" Holland from his size. His people were Episcopalians. He had doubts about the equality of the Christ in the God-Head and was most likely a DEIST. Holland was a thoroughgoing Jeffersonian of the most approved anti-Federalist as things went then.

Major Holland was a son of William and Mary (Harrison) Holland. (See Harrison Family.) William Holland emigrated from England to North Carolina about 1725.

Major James Holland and his wife, Sarah (Gilbert) Holland also had a daughter, Cynthia (born 10 November, 1789, died July 17, 1863), who married Tyree Rodes, Sr. (1771-1827), on April 25, 1811.

North and South Carolina Marriage Bonds, page 240: Cynthia Holland and Tyree Rodes, 25 April, 1811, Rutherford County, North Carolina.

Tyree Rodes and Cynthia Holland Rodes were the progenitors of the Rodes in Tennessee.

Additional extracts from the manuscript mentioned above: "When James Holland married her (Mrs. Gilbert's) daughter, she was fifteen and he twenty-five years of age. They were married on Christmas Day. The ceremony was performed in the barn, being the only room large enough to contain the guests. . . . James Holland did not follow the vocation of carpenter after he became of age, but took contracts, hired workmen and directed them for a short time and accumulated money. He studied law and was distinguished both in the Civil and Criminal practices. He

was early in politics, was High Sheriff of the County, was in the State Senate and twenty-two years in the United States Congress. His majorities were large and he naturally had a proud looking face, so much so that some man wished that he might be elected by just one vote so that he might not be so proud. He was a Major in the Revolutionary War, and at one time was in a most hazardous situation, having been selected to go into the English Army and report their strength to the Whig side. He walked up and down the English lines and asked, 'How strong are we?' and having obtained the information required, returned to his own army. The knowledge thus obtained was one great cause of the success of the American Army in that part of the country. He was chosen as well for his manners and resemblance to the English as for his great bravery and skill.

"As Major Holland was married during the War, he carried his bride at once into Virginia and then left her as guest of Patrick Henry (Governor of Virginia) until the close of the War. The bridal trip was taken on race horses and the one used by the bride was named 'Bluebird.' They took a servant with them (this servant, 'Dinah,' lived to be over ninety years and died in the family). After the War, Major Holland built and furnished a fine house. The parlor on the second story was reached by a broad stairs. In it were portraits of Major Holland and his daughter, Cynthia, and his friend, Thomas Jefferson, all painted by the best artists in Philadelphia. This house was the theater of heavy troubles. Just at its completion Major Holland was on the roof, his foot slipped and he fell to the ground, the scaffolding breaking his fall. He seemed dead when his wife reached him; but she succeeded in bleeding him, and in just in the place where she had pressed very hard on the arm and bled him her baby was marked by one arm being off at that place. Also after the completion and furnishing of the house some sparks fell on the tar roof, and the house was burned to the ground. The servants, except a few, ran to Rutherfordton for help, and those that remained threw the mirrors, paintings and furniture out of the win-

dows. Mrs. Holland saved her husband's secretary and all his valuable papers and a small trunk of gold which she carried alone so as not to betray its weight that it contained gold. This strain was at last the cause of her death, as was also the bruised leg from the fall from the house the cause of the death of the husband, Major Holland, who at the time of the fire was away from home on professional business to be absent several days longer, but an irresistible impulse caused him to come home but too late as all was destroyed. He rebuilt the house upon the old brick walls and afterwards sold it and moved his family to Tennessee where he and Colonel Gilbert had large tracts of land donated by the United States for Revolutionary services. Here he hoped to settle his children around him. He afterwards said that it was wrong for parents to leave their home and follow their children.

"He was in Congress at the time of the removal of his family, not intending to leave North Carolina until two years later, but his wife, hearing of the sickness of their son, William Blount, left hurriedly to be with him, but he had been buried two weeks before she reached them. He had been sent out only a few weeks before by his father to Maury County, Tennessee, to locate a farm for him. . . . Thomas Holland and his father (James) often walked together in Philadelphia and because of their elegant appearance one was called Lord Holland and the other Prince Holland. Major Holland had his sons and daughters to dress well, he often bringing gifts of jewelry, etc., to them. His own dress was of the best quality, but on the 4th of July he always wore a complete suit of homespun. . . .

"Major Holland was not a member of any Church. Could not believe in the equality of the God-Head. Considering Christ not equal in power with the Father, although he believed in his divine origin.

"Major Holland lived for several years after his removal to Tennessee. His name was once run for Congress, but he was not elected. His sore leg was a great affliction to him, and his death was attributed to its being too suddenly healed. When he died, many came to assist Mrs. Holland,

but she refused their assistance and locked herself in with two or three of her most faithful servants and performed herself the sad office of washing and shrouding him. She saw every honor and attention paid to his remains and for two weeks could not shed a tear and became so reduced by long sickness that she had to learn to walk again.

“Mrs. Holland, who never spoke evil of anyone, said, ‘Civility was everybody’s due.’ She was kind to all her friends, family and servants. She affected surprise if anyone of the younger members of the family spoke of being sick so that they felt almost as if they had committed a wrong if they were sick. She entered with enjoyment into the pleasures of the young, and she preferred the wealthy admirers of her descendants to the poorer. She was noted for her fine business mind. She having almost all of the home duties to manage, she did a little sewing but had everything well performed by those over whom she presided. Besides her house, dairy, poultry and stock, she attended to her farm, weavers, carpenters, shoemakers, and blacksmiths, to the flax, hemp and cotton. She dressed well and in her latter days always wore black silk dresses with white muslin or lace shawl over it, leaving only white folds visible in front. She wore lace caps with fluted borders. The last two years of her life were clouded by illness, resulting from loss of memory which caused her to neglect the usual constant precautions which she had always used for the disease caused by lifting the heavy trunk many years before. The neglect of this disease and an excessive inflammation on her arms as well as entire absence of business cares affected her mind. She thought of her Mama, Papa and husband. She died after an illness of some length. The last month she would only drink buttermilk, and if there was any attempt to thicken it or add nutrition, she would throw it away. She died calmly and her last sayings were, ‘Hanah, take care of my little children and prepare everything for your Master, for he will soon be here.’ She was lovely and useful in her life.”

From the manuscript mentioned above is extracted the descendants of James Holland and his wife, Sarah (Gilbert) Holland:

“I. Thomas Harrison Holland; died unmarried. Studied medicine under the great ‘Doctor Rush’; was a United States Surgeon; died of yellow fever in New Orleans, Louisiana, having made a distinguished reputation for his successful treatment of that disease. Sick men were brought and were lying at his door when he was dying. He was buried with Masonic honors. His horse, richly comparisond, was led in the funeral procession. He had left his servant, Riah, at home on his last trip to New Orleans. One day Riah came running and said that he ‘saw his master pale and white, that he was dead.’ They feared that he was insane, but his odd speech was written down and dated, but soon letters came informing them of the death of Dr. Holland at that time.

“II. James Holland married Winifred Sandford and had

“1. Sarah Myra who married Rev. Frederick Thompson, a Presbyterian minister, and had an only child, Myra.

“2. Mary Louisa who married a Mr. Haddox.

“3. Cynthia who married Samuel Pointer and had:

“a. Mary Lou who married Mr. Cheairs.

“b. Willie who married Samuel Cannon.

“c. Sally; d. Cynthia; e. Henry; f. Sam.

“III. Cynthia who married, first, Tyree Rodes, and second, Peter Booker. By the first marriage they had:

“a. Sarah Myra who married, first, John Harper Rivers, and second, Colonel Joseph Trotter (buried at Columbia, Tennessee).

“John Harper Rivers and Sarah Myra Rivers had:

“(1) Cynthia who married Benjamin Franklin Carter.

“(2) William who married Julia Flournoy.

“(3) Mary who married, first, George A. Sykes, and second, Dr. William Batte.

“b. Robert who married Sarah Elizabeth Carter, sister of Benjamin F. Carter above. They had:

“(1) Inez who married Rev. George Hunt, an Episcopalian Minister.

“(2) Cynthia; married Felix Smith.

“(3) Tyree; married Elizabeth Murrell and had one son, Clifton, who owned ‘Crescent View,’ Giles County, Tennessee.

“(4) Frank; (5) Robert; (6) Holland.

“c. Tyree.

“IV. Sarah Myra; married her cousin, Doctor Jacky Prince. She was the daughter with one arm. She died without children. On account of their relationship, Major James Holland opposed this union for several years, but as they were still constant he gave his consent.

“V. Sophia Salina, who married Major Hardin Perkins and had:

“a. Augustus.

“b. Louisa; married William Cochrane, a lawyer, and had:

“(1) Sophia Holland; married Philip A. Fitts, an Episcopalian clergyman, and their children are: William, Sophia, Philip.

“(2) Hardin Perkins; married Hattie Earle.

“(3) Louisa Henrietta; married Thomas A. Perkins, Jr.

“(4) William Gilbert; married Lily Taylor and had: John Taylor, Louisa, Claudius, Hardin Perkins.”

This is the end of the data taken from the Manuscript.

Inscriptions taken from the tombstones in the Holland Cemetery about nine miles east of Columbia, Tennessee:

MAJOR JAMES HOLLAND

This inscription has been copied above.

JAMES HOLLAND

“Sacred to the memory of James Holland, son of Major James Holland, born the 1st of February, 1800, and departed this life the 8th of July, 1836.”

WILLIAM BLOUNT HOLLAND

“In memory of William Blount Holland, born February 23, 1790, and died June 16, 1810. He enjoyed a liberal education and was esteemed for many virtues.”

MARY ANN LOUISA HOLLAND

"In memory of Mary Ann Louisa Holland, daughter of Major James Holland. Born 12 March, 1803; died in July, 1818, in the sixteenth year of her age."

CANDICE HOLLAND

"In memory of Candice Holland, wife of Marcus Holland, a nephew of Major James Holland. She departed this life August, 1817, in the thirty-sixth year of her age. She lived and died a pious Christian of the Methodist denomination."

SARAH GILBERT

"In memory of Sarah Gilbert, mother-in-law of Major James Holland, who departed this life the twenty-first of December, 1822, after an active and industrious life of 85 years."

KERN SANDFORD HOLLAND

"In memory of Kern Sandford Holland, infant daughter of James and Winifred Holland. Born the 28th of March, 1835, and departed this life on the 10th of April, 1835, aged one week, six days."

BAYLESS EARL PRINCE

"In memory of Bayless Earl Prince, who died in August, 1825. He served his country with credit to himself as an officer in the Creek War and at the battle of New Orleans."

Line of Descent:

William¹ Holland married Mary Harrison and had
James² Holland who married Sarah² Gilbert and had
Cynthia³ Holland who married Tyree⁴ Rodes and had
Sarah Myra⁵ Rodes who married John Harper⁴ Rivers
and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter and had

Myra Belle⁸ Carter who married Gustavus A.⁷ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

KEARNEY FAMILY

6W(2)347: Lord Thomas Kearney (born circa —; died August, 1764) was an Irish Lord and emigrated to North Carolina circa 1700 from Knockonglass, Tipperary, Ireland, and resided in North Carolina from 1731 to 1764 when he died in Halifax County. His title is proved by his will, which is recorded in Will Book No. 1, page 146, and which concludes as follows: "Witness whereunto I set my Lord's seal, etc."

4W(2)185: What is the relationship of Edmond Kearney, of Hampton, Virginia, to Michael Kearney and to Thomas Kearney? The known facts are: Edmond and Michael were both in Hampton, Virginia between 1712-1719 (CRNC 2/18, 122, 425; 4/766, 890). Both received patents in 1717 and 1721 (CRNC 2/425). A Michael and an Edmond of Virginia, brothers and merchants, registered power of attorney in Chowan County, North Carolina. Thomas, of Chowan, married Sarah Alston, daughter of John Alston. Thomas and Edmond had adjoining lands in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, and Thomas had a son, Edmond.

NCH&GR 2/149: Michael Kearney in Province of North Carolina, 1720.

NCH&GR 2/379: Will of Benjamin Rawlins, Edgecombe County, December 10, 1738—February Court 1738/9: Legatees, "Edmond Kearney (son of Thomas and Sarah); Thomas Kearney; Sarah Kearney, wife of Thomas; Elizabeth Alston, wife of John." Thomas Kearney, Executor.

6W(2)347: Sarah Alston married Thomas Kearney circa 1730.

CRNC 4/628: Thomas Kearney, 400 acres, Bertie County, 21 March, 1743.

CRNC 4/616: Thomas Kearney, 300 acres, Edgecombe County, 5 May, 1742.

CRNC 4/618: Thomas Kearney, 150 acres, Edgecombe County, 5 May, 1742.

CRNC 4/761: Thomas Kearney, 200 acres, Edgecombe County, 6 April, 1745.

CRNC 4/766: Thomas Kearney, 300 acres, Edgecombe County, 11 April, 1745.

CRNC 4/347: Thomas Kearney, Sheriff, Edgecombe County, 1739.

CRNC 4/626: Thomas Kearney, Edgecombe County, Council at Edenton, 15 March, 1743, proves right to take up land, 16 black persons.

CRNC 4/134-135: Thomas Kearney signs "The Humble address of the Grand Jury for the whole Province of North Carolina," now met at Edenton, April 1, 1731. (He was from Chowan County at that time.)

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight Co., Virginia, page 307: Thomas Kearney sold land on Peach Tree Creek, Halifax County, North Carolina, May 10, 1742.

The Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina by Graves, page 491: Thomas Kearney married Sarah Alston (born circa —; died circa 1758) about 1730-32. He died in August, 1764, and his will was dated the same month (Alstons and Allstons, etc., page 492, and Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, by Grimes, 1690-1760, page 141). In his will he mentions Sarah, his wife, and children, Edmond and Philip.

The Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina, page 492: The first public record of Thomas Kearney was as a grand juror in Chowan County, April 1, 1731, at the same time as Henry Gustin. In June he was Justice of the Peace for his county and then made the first sheriff, at the same time as John Dawson. (This is also in the History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, pages 1, 17, 44.) In April, 1745, he obtained a patent for land in Edgecombe County. In April, 1752, he was a member of the Assembly and in 1754 was on a commission to examine and settle public accounts. (Also in CRNC 4/1294 and 5/55.)

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, pages 260, 280: Thomas Kearney signs as Deputy Clerk of the Court, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, 1735-36, and as Clerk, 1736.

CRNC 3/282: Thomas Kearney claims £5 for 10 days duty as Grand Juror, May 15, 1731.

CRNC 3/319: Above claim allowed May 15, 1731.

CRNC 3/417: Thomas Kearney, Justice of the Peace, Bertie County, 16 May, 1732.

Grimes Abstract of Wills, 1690-1760, page 170: Thomas Kearney, Deputy Clerk of the Court, 1736. Page 246: Deputy Clerk, 1735. Page 260: Clerk of the Court, 1736-37. Page 280: Clerk of the Court, 1735-36; all in Edgecombe County, North Carolina. Page 306: Thomas Kearney, Executor of a will, Edgecombe County, December 10, 1738; Sarah Kearney one of the legatees.

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 492: Thomas and Sarah Kearney had: a. Edmond; b. Philip who married Elizabeth Kinchen, daughter of William Kinchen and Mary (Dawson) Kinchen. And on page 494: Philip Kearney married November 30, 1762, to Elizabeth Kinchen; died October 28, 1794. Will probated November, 1794. (After his death, widow married John Jones.) Their fifth child, Sarah, born March 21, 1774, married on April 30, 1796, to Rev. John Lindsay. (See Kinchen and Lindsay Families.)

6W/(2)347: Thomas Kearney had issue: Philip (born 1733; died October 28, 1794), who married November 30, 1763, Elizabeth Kinchen, daughter of William and Mary Dawson Kinchen. (The father of Mary Dawson, wife of William Kinchen, was the Honorable John Dawson, of North Carolina, member of the Assembly, 1734-40, Associate Justice of the Superior Court, 1751, Colonel of Militia (CRNC 22/273, 274, 309, 313), and had issue, Sarah (born March 2, 1774; died December 16, 1840). Sarah Kearney married November 10, 1796, Rev. John Lindsay.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, page 357: Thomas Kearney made a deed to his father-in-law, William Bennett, in Edgecombe County, North Carolina, 17 May, 1742 (shows whom he married).

Same, page 471: Captain Barnaby Kearney, Nansemond County, Virginia, probably was the son of Major Barnaby Kearney (Major, Nansemond County Militia, 1680). He was Justice of the Peace in 1678 and Burgess in 1684 from Nansemond County, Virginia. Captain Barnaby died between July, 1733, and 23 May, 1737.

Same, page 346: Barnaby Kearney, Justice, 6th day, 10th month, 1679. He was also member of the House of Burgesses.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, page 147: "Mr. Kearney came and desired that we should not assault Nansemond County," November 21, 1677. This was Maj. Barnaby Kearney, later a member of the House of Burgesses. Time: during Bacon's Rebellion.

The relationship of Barnaby, Edmond, Michael and Thomas Kearney has not been established. The latter three named may have been brothers and all the sons of the first.

North and South Carolina Marriage Bonds, page 155: Philip Kearney and Elizabeth Kinchen, 30 November, 1763, Halifax County.

Line of Descent:

Lord Thomas¹ Kearney married Sarah² Alston and had Philip² Kearney who married Elizabeth³ Kinchen and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter and had

Benjamin F.⁷ Carter who married Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers and had

Myra Belle⁸ Carter who married Gustavus A.⁷ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

KINCEN FAMILY

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 230, and 7W(1)268: William Kinchen was residing in the Isle of Wight County before 1700. He was a member of the vestry of the old Brick Church (claimed to be the oldest English Church in America) near Smithfield from 1724 to his death.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 169: William Kinchen signs address, as cornet in the militia, to Queen Anne in 1702, protesting loyalty.

NCH&GR 2/308: Mr. W. William Kinchen was one of the Church wardens of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, July 13, 1724.

Calendar of Virginia State Papers, 1/201: William Kinchen listed as Warden from Vestry Book of the Upper Parish of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, May 9, 1724.

William Kinchen signs petition as vestryman to the "Vestry of Upper Parish, Isle of Wight County, for division of said Parish, May 9, 1722.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 25: William Kinchen, Warden of the Upper Parish, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1724. Member of the Legislature from Bertie County, North Carolina, 1733. (Also see papers of Frank Rodes, member National Society Colonial Wars, National Society No. 3,663.)

CRNC 2/526: At a Council held at Edenton, April 9, 1724, directs a Commission of Peace issue for Bertie Precinct to . . . Barnaby McKinne . . . Thomas Kinchen, Gent.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 230; 34V201; CRNC 3/223: William Kinchen, Sheriff, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1729 (appointed by the Governor, May 2, 1729). Justice of the Peace, Isle of Wight County, 1731.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 202: William Kinchen, Sheriff, 1724 (?), Isle of Wight County, Virginia.

Same, page 230: William Kinchen married Elizabeth Ruffin, daughter of Robert Ruffin of Surry County, Virginia. He made his will August 13, 1734, and it was probated July 28, 1735. They had: Matthew, died unmarried about 1737; William, married Elizabeth Dawson, daughter of Colonel John Dawson and his wife, who was formerly Mrs. Elizabeth (Thomas) Boddie, widow of John Boddie. (This John Boddie is not the one whose widow married John⁴ Pope.)

Same, page 708: William Kinchen, 1733, representative from Bertie County in General Assembly of North Carolina.

Same, page 230: William Kinchen may have been married twice, as he is said to have married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Joyner. (Also in Chapman's Isle of Wight Marriages.)

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, and Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 75: William Kinchen; wife, Elizabeth; sons, Matthew and William; grandson, William. Died August 13, 1734. Recorded July 28, 1735.

Marriages, Isle of Wight County, Virginia, 1628-1800, page 30: Joseph Jones and Elizabeth Kinchen, sister of William Kinchen, 1726. Will Book 3, page 43; Will Book 4, page 113.

Same, page 22: James Godwin and Sarah Kinchen, daughter of William Kinchen, 1734. Will Book 4, page 72.

Same, page 28: Thomas Jarrell and Martha Kinchen, daughter of William Kinchen, 1734. Will Book 4, pages 72 and 113.

Same, page 50: Ethelred Taylor and Patience Kinchen, daughter of William Kinchen, 1734. Will Book 4, page 72.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 203: William Kinchen, Will, Edgecombe County, North Carolina, November 6, 1736—November Court, 1736. Daughters, Martha, Elizabeth, Mary, Temperance; Sons, John, William. (Have not identified this William Kinchen. He may have been the one mentioned in the marriages just above. He could not have been either of the other William Kinchens, as William¹ died 1734 and William² died 1758.)

Wills and Administrations, Isle of Wight County, Book 2, page 32: Joseph Jones, wife, Elizabeth, brother-in-law, William Kinchen, died December 5, 1726. Recorded September 25, 1727. Page 54: Inventory of above estate presented by William Kinchen September 28, 1730.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 25: William Kinchen reached Edgecombe County in 1740.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 25: Men who afterward achieved great honor by defending the political and civil rights of their county bought and received by grant much land.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 230: William Kinchen was Sheriff of Northampton County, North Carolina, and moved to Edgecombe County. He represented this county in the General Assembly of 1754 and 1758 and died in 1758.

(For his will, see Alstons and Allstons, page 521.) William and Elizabeth (Dawson) Kinchen had: a. William; b. John; c. Martha; d. Elizabeth who married Philip Kearney. (For his descendants see Alston History, page 494, and Kearney Family.)

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 492: Philip Kearney married Elizabeth Kinchen, daughter of William Kinchen, Jr., who married Mary Dawson.

Same, page 494: Philip Kearney, who married Elizabeth Kinchen, died October 28, 1794. (Please note that just above the text says that William Kinchen married Elizabeth Dawson and that he married Mary Dawson. However, in the Dawson record it says that he married *Mary*. Of course, she could have been named both Mary and Elizabeth.)

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, page 525: December 11, 1735, Barnaby Thomas refers to John Dawson as his brother-in-law. From this, it is evident that he married Mary, sister of Barnaby and Philip Thomas (see Thomas Family), who bore him children: b. Mary, who married William Kinchen, Jr. He (William² Kinchen) was a member of the General Assembly at New Berne, December, 1754 and 1758. Their children were: Martha, Elizabeth, Mary, Temperance, John, William. Of these, Elizabeth married Philip Kearney. John³ died in 1793.

History of Edgecombe County, North Carolina, page 434: In 1754, William Williams and William Kinchen, Jr., Representatives from Edgecombe, introduced a bill in the Assembly authorizing the appointment of a vestry for Edgecombe.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 708: William Kinchen and John Dawson, Justices of the Peace, Bertie County, North Carolina, 1739.

CRNC 5/232: William Kinchen elected member of the General Assembly from Edgecombe County, North Carolina, December 12, 1754.

CRNC 3/223: Justice of the Peace.

CRNC 25/241, 286: Commissioner for building town, 1749, Northampton County.

CRNC 4/346: William Kinchen, Justice of the Peace for Bertie County, March 6, 1739.

CRNC 25/210: William Kinchen appointed Vestryman for the Northwest Parish of Bertie County, 1727.

CRNC 25/286: All tax monies to be paid to . . . Mr. William Kinchen . . . Counties of Edgecombe, Northampton, Granville, 1754.

History of Edgecomb County, North Carolina, page 25: William Kinchen, born 1690, died 1757-58. He married Mary Dawson. They had: Elizabeth Kinchen, born 1745, died 1799, married Philip Kearney. They had: Sarah, born March 2, 1744, died December 16, 1840, who married John Lindsay and had Elizabeth Kinchen Lindsay, who married Dr. Benjamin Carter.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 521-523: William Kinchen, Jr.'s Will dated 6 November, 1758.

Abstracts of Wills, North Carolina, 1760-1800, page 109: William Kinchen; Sarah and Matthew.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 203: William Kinchen, Edgecombe County, will executed November 6, 1758. Mentions son, William. One of the executors was Henry Dawson, another was John Kinchen (son).

Same, page 116: Will, John Kinchen, 1793. Mentions Henry M. (son) and Peggy, daughter. Wife not named. This was in Franklin County.

Historical Sketches of North Carolina by Wheeler, 1-73: John Kinchen as member of Provisional Congress for the whole State—from Halifax District, Orange County, subsequent to the Declaration of Mecklenburg, 20 May, 1775.

Same, page 76: Second Session of Council at Newberne, 28 February, 1776, John Kinchen and Adner Nash sent to Charleston "to devise measures of concert and union between the Southern Colonies."

Same, pages 77-78: The Provisional Congress met at Halifax, North Carolina, 4 April, 1776. John Kinchen shown as member from Orange County.

Seventeenth Century, Etc., page 363: John Kinchen, son of William, who married Elizabeth Dawson, represented Orange County, North Carolina, in the Provisional Con-

gress, 4 April, 1776. (Here is a probable explanation of the text above which says that William² Kinchen married Elizabeth, or Mary, Dawson, daughter of Colonel John Dawson. The latter had a son, John, who probably married and had a daughter, Elizabeth who married *John* Kinchen.)

Note: John Kinchen was not a direct ancestor of the author, but the notes about him are recorded in order to show the prominence of the family.

Abstracts of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 203: William² Kinchen, Edgecombe County, November 6, 1758–December Court, 1758. Mentions sons, John and William; daughters, Martha, Elizabeth, Mary, Temperance.

1T67: Matthew² Kinchen made his will and after several legacies left all his goods and chattels to his brother, William Kinchen, and his three sisters, Eliza, Martha and Patience. April Court, 1737.

North and South Carolina Marriage Bonds, page 155: Philip Kearney and Elizabeth Kinchen, 30 November, 1763, Halifax County, North Carolina.

Line of Descent:

William¹ Kinchen married Elizabeth⁴ Ruffin and had William² Kinchen who married Mary⁵ Dawson and had Elizabeth³ Kinchen who married Philip² Kearney and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

LINDSAY FAMILY

16W(1)138: The following giving the parentage of Rev. David Lindsay will be found in the South Leith Church records at the Register House (1599-1620), Scotland. Jerome (or Hierome) Lindsay and Margaret Colville, their infant son baptized David, 2nd January, 1603. Witnesses:

1. David Lyndsay of Edsell, Bt.; 2. George Ramsey of Dolhousie; 3. Mr. David Lyndsay.

27V75: Rev. David Lindsay was the son of a Scotch ancestor, Sir Hierome (or Jerome) Lindsay of the Mount.

16W(1)136: Rev. David Lindsay died in Northumberland (County) in 1667 "in ye 63rd year of his age." This would make his birth year 1604.

5R43: Gives coat of arms, Lindsay of Northumberland.

16W(1)136: A burial ground was found in an isolated grove of trees, and one stone bore this inscription, "Here lyeth interred ye body of That Holy and Reverant Divine, Mr. David Lindsay, late Minister of Yeocomico (Northumberland County), born in the kingdom of Scotland, ye first and lawful son of ye R^t Honorable Sir Hierome Lindsay, K^t of ye Mount, Lord-LyonKing-at-Arms, who departed this life in ye 63th year of his age, ye 3d April, Anno Dom 1667."

3NCH&GR, 199: Rev. David Lindsay, Minister of the Gospel, married a couple 4 January, 1658/9 in Northumberland County.

8V335: The Albemarle Lindsays are descendants of a Robert Lindsay of Northumberland, a contemporary and probably a relation to Rev. David.

10V96: The Albemarle Lindsays are descendants of Adam Lindsay, who is believed to have come to Virginia from Scotland in the latter part of the Seventeenth Century or early in the Eighteenth Century. Adam Lindsay must have emigrated to this country early in 1700 or before. It is not certain whether James Lindsay was born in Scotland or not.

6W(2)348: James Lindsay, the immigrant, first appears in Gloucester County in 1635, and appears in the family record of Rev. John Lindsay, his great-great-grandson, as the second son of Sir Jerome Lindsay of Annatland. From names, dates and other data found in the "Lindsays of America" by Margaret Isabella Lindsay and in the "Lindsays of America" by Lord Lindsay, published in 1849 (Vol. 1, pages 248 and 428), this claim seems probable. He had issue, Caleb, born circa 1664, and died at "Potabor Hall,"

St. Mary's Parish, Caroline County, Virginia, 1717. Caleb Lindsay married Miss Clare of Spottsylvania County, Virginia, and had issue, James, born 1700, died 1782. (A thorough search failed to find any reliable reference to this "Miss Claire" and her issue, so I feel sure that the references to follow about Caleb Lindsay are correct.)

10V310: Caleb Lindsay, son of Colonel James Lindsay, married and died s. p. (died without issue).

10V96: Caleb Lindsay gave his large estate in Essex County . . . to his younger brother, Reuben, who married Caleb's adopted daughter, Hannah Tidwell.

6W(2)348: James Lindsay, Vestryman, St. Mary's Parish, Caroline County, Virginia, married Sarah Daniel, daughter of William Daniel, Gent., of Caroline County and had issue: John, born August 27, 1728. (See Daniel Family.)

10V96: Colonel James Lindsay of Caroline, son of Adam, the immigrant, married Sarah Daniel. He died in 1782, "aged 82 years."

12T249: Gives the date of the marriage of James Lindsay and Sarah Daniel as February 16, 1720.

6W(2)348 and *Historic Shepherdstown* by Danske Dandridge, 1910, Vol. 7, page 220: John Lindsay moved to Halifax County, North Carolina. He was a militiaman in the French and Indian Wars, 1756-58. He married Mary Masterson, daughter of Edward Masterson and Mary, his wife (Edward Masterson said to be a descendant of Sir Thomas Masterson, and he, Edward, was also a soldier in the French and Indian Wars, *History of Shepherdstown*, 7/21), and had John, born May 30, 1768, died 1828.

7H21: Edward Masterson, March, 1756, in militia of Fairfax County, Virginia, was given 300 pounds of tobacco for his services.

3V310: "Of the other children of Colonel James Lindsay of Caroline County, 3. John, probably married and was last heard of in the early part of the Nineteenth Century in Halifax, North Carolina."

6W(2)348: Rev. John Lindsay (1768-1828) married Sarah Kearney on November 10, 1796 (see Alston and Kear-

ney Families), and moved to Maury County, Tennessee, and had issue: Elizabeth, born October 17, 1800, and died March 8, 1873, who married Dr. Benjamin Carter; Sarah was born August 29, 1806.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 208: Sarah Lindsay, widow of James Lindsay and daughter of William Daniel from Essex or Caroline County, Virginia, was a taxpayer in 1788, Oxford District, Granville County, North Carolina. (Probably after the death of her husband in 1782, Sarah moved to North Carolina to be with or near her son, John.)

7V97: Caleb Lindsay, oldest son of Colonel James Lindsay of Caroline County, Virginia, and his wife, Sarah Daniel, had no children. Caleb was born 14 February, 1720. (If Caleb was the son of Colonel James Lindsay, he could not have been born "circa 1664," as stated above. Colonel James died in 1782, "aged 82 years," which would have made his birth year 1700.)

8V415: John Lindsay, Gent., Vestryman, Parish of Frederick, Frederick, Virginia, 1769. This John Lindsay was probably the son of James and was born August 27, 1728, as stated above.

If Robert Lindsay was a contemporary of Rev. David Lindsay who died in 1667, the dates would make it probable that they were brothers and that they came to Virginia together or at about the same time. And *if* Adam Lindsay came to Virginia "early in 1700 or before," it seems possible that Robert might have been the father of Adam. It is probable that Robert and the Rev. David were the sons of Sir Hierome (or Jerome) Lindsay. (See 27V75 above.)

Lists of Emigrants to America, 1600-1700, page 179: Robert Lindsey, living "Ouer the River," 16 February, 1635. This Lindsey's name is spelled with an "e" instead of an "a." However, interchange of vowels was more or less common in early days. The year 1635 is the same year that James Lindsay was first found in Gloucester County, Virginia.

There is something wrong as to Colonel James Lindsay. If he was the son of Adam, which seems probable, he could not have been in Gloucester County in 1635. Since the text

states that Colonel James Lindsay died in 1782, "aged 82 years," he must have been born in 1700 at about the time Adam came to Virginia. To have appeared in Gloucester County in 1635 and to have died in 1782 would have made James Lindsay 147 years old at the time of his death. So, it seems that the year 1635 should be 1735.

A study of the dates makes it probable that Rev. David Lindsay and Robert Lindsay were brothers and that Robert might have been the father of Adam and he, Adam, the father of Colonel James Lindsay.

Line of Descent:

Adam¹ Lindsay had

James² Lindsay who married Sarah³ Daniel and had

John³ Lindsay who married Mary² Masterson and had

John⁴ Lindsay who married Sarah³ Kearney and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.

(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

OVERTON FAMILY

History of Louisa County, Virginia, page 395: It is believed that the Virginia Overtons were descendants of John Overton of Easington, in Holderness, Yorkshire, England, whose son was General Robert Overton, born 1609, and, under Parliament, took up arms and served under Cromwell and finally was sent to the Barbadoes in solitude.

William, son of General Robert, was born in England, December 3, 1639, and came to Virginia prior to 1670. He married Mary Waters at Yorktown, 24 November, 1670, on board the vessel in which she came to Virginia. She was the daughter of Mrs. Ann Waters of St. Sepulcher's Parish, London. The Overtons settled on Falling Creek where they had patents for 4,600 acres on the south side of the Pamunkey River in New Kent County. He owned other land in St. Peter's Parish. Children: William, born August 6, 1675; Temperance, born March 2, 1679 (married William Harris. See Harris Family).

Page 398: William, son of William and Mary Waters Overton, born in Virginia, August 6, 1675, and married

Margaret (Peggy), daughter of Edward Garland of Hanover County, Virginia.

11V306: From the Overton Register: William Overton, born in England, December 3, 1628, married Mary Waters November 24, 1670, and emigrated to America. (Note 11 years difference in birth of William.) They had Temperance Overton, daughter, born March 2, 1679.

11V307: 23 April, 1681, William Overton, 4,600 acres in New Kent County, on south side of Pamunky River, on Falling Creek, for transportation of 92 persons. Among the 92 names attached are William Overton and Elizabeth Overton.

11V307: 29 October, 1690, William Overton, 837 acres in St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County.

11V305: Anne Waters of St. Sepulchres, London, widow, Will 29 September, 1697, proved 4 July, 1700, "... daughter Elizabeth Overton, now in Virginia. . . ."

Gentry Family in America, pages 228-229: William Overton was a son of Colonel Robert Overton, of England, born in 1609, distinguished himself at the battle of "Marston Moor," September 20, 1643; commanded a brigade in the battle of Dunbar under Cromwell; Governor of Hull in 1647 and rendered other distinguished services to the Commonwealth. He was a political prisoner in the Tower of London for many years; accompanied Cromwell to Scotland in 1650; Governor of Edinburgh; scholar; soldier, intimate friend of Milton who celebrated his exploits in "Defensio Secundo." (See Harris Family.)

Line of Descent:

John¹ Overton had

Gen. Robert² Overton who had

William³ Overton who married Mary Waters and had
Temperance⁴ Overton who married William³ Harris and
had

Robert⁴ Harris who married Mourning Glenn and had

Sarah⁵ Harris who married John³ Rodes and had

Tyree⁴ Rodes who married Cynthia³ Holland and had

Sarah Myra⁵ who married John Harper⁴ Rivers and had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter and had

Myra Belle⁸ Carter who married Gustavus A.⁷ Pope.
(See Pope Line.)

PALIN FAMILY

Alstons and Allstons of North and South Carolina, by Groves, 1901, page 98: Henry Palin had a land grant in Pasquotank County, North Carolina, 1652.

Seventeenth Century and Isle of Wight County, Virginia, p. 134: Other grantees were Henry Palin, who came from the Ware River in Virginia, 1638.

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 98: Henry Palin had a son, Henry Palin, Jr., who died 30 January, 1699, leaving his wife, Ann, and sons, John and Thomas.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 574: Henry Palin, Jr., living in Pasquotank Precinct, 1697.

Grimes Abstract of Wills, 1690-1760, page 277: Henry Palin, Jr., Pasquotank Precinct, January 30, 1700–April 16, 1700. Sons, John and Thomas, wife, and Executrix, Anne.

NCH&GR 1/463: Henry Palin of Pasquotank Precinct, died February 4 (?), 1699, Court Records, Chowan County, Edenton, North Carolina.

Same, 1/456: John Palin, Chief Justice in 1731, Court Records, Chowan Precinct, Edenton, North Carolina.

Same, 1/129: John Palin, Chief Justice, signs "habeous Corpus," 4 August, 1732.

Lost Tribes of North Carolina, page 121: John Palin "our Chief Justice," 1732.

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 98: John Palin, Chief Justice in 1731. He died on August 16, 1737, leaving his wife, Sarah; son, John; daughter, Mary, who married John Clark about 1686. John Clark died May 30, 1689, leaving an only child, Mary, who married John Alston and wife, Mary, as Executrix.

Abstract of Wills, North Carolina, 1690-1760, page 277: John Palin, Pasquotank, August 16, 1737–October Court, 1737. Son, John; daughter, Mary Cleark.

Same, page 277: Thomas Palin, Pasquotank, August 1, 1733–July Court, 1734. Sons, Henry and Thomas.

NCH&GR 1/363: Will, John Palin, Pasquotank, February 15, 1753–December 26, 1756.

Alstons and Allstons, Etc., page 98: Mary Clark, only child of John Clark and Mary Palin, born circa 1687, died after 1758. She married John Alston, circa 1700.

Line of Descent:

Henry¹ Palin had

Henry² Palin who married Ann and had

John³ Palin who married Sarah and had

Mary⁴ Palin who married John¹ Clark and had

Mary² Clark who married John¹ Alston and had

Sarah² Alston who married Lord Thomas¹ Kearney and had

Philip² Kearney who married Elizabeth³ Kinchen and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

PANNIL FAMILY

6W(1)113: On the rolls of Battle Abbey will be found the name of PAINELL; from him are supposed to be descended the Pannells of England and Ireland. The Pannells of England were churchmen and Royalists. But in Ireland they remained Roman Catholics. On the accession of Cromwell to power three of the English Pannils emigrated to America—one to Maryland, one to Norfolk, Virginia, the third to Rappahannock, Virginia. The latter changed the writing of the name to Pannil.

16W(1)290: William Pannil was living in Richmond County, Virginia, in 1698. His wife was Frances —, a granddaughter of William Mills, formerly of Rappahannock County, whose land descended to his two daughters, Ann and Elizabeth, latter the mother of said Frances, her sole surviving heiress, in 1698. William Pannil made his

will December 13, 1715, proved in Richmond County, August 1, 1716. Makes his wife Executrix and names issue: William, who was evidently William Pannil of Orange County, Virginia; David, George, Elizabeth, Frances, Katherine and Mary.

Elizabeth married Daniel³ Carter circa 1722-1725 and was 81 years old when he died.

33V329: "The Pannils have long been a family of importance in that part of Colonial Virginia."

The Pannil family had many prominent and distinguished descendants, among them being General J. E. B. Stuart, the noted Confederate Cavalry leader, and the late Governor Holt of North Carolina.

Branches of the Pannil family were living in old Granville County, North Carolina, after 1750.

17W(1) 75: June 1, 1698, the petition of William Pannil and Frances, his wife, that William Mills, formerly of Rapahannock, had land which descended to Ann, his daughter, and wife unto John Burkett, now deceased, and Elizabeth, mother of said Frances, now said Elizabeth's sole heir. (Records of Richmond County, Virginia, Order Book No. 2.)

Line of Descent:

William¹ Pannil married Frances and had

Elizabeth² who married Daniel³ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

RIVERS FAMILY

The writer has had considerable difficulty in finding accurate data on the Rivers Family, particularly prior to the Revolutionary War.

Family Record of Richard Rivers by (Mrs. James J.) Mattie Reed Quinn: The Rivers Family in Virginia were Huguenot. We know that the family was of high standing in England: among the first coming to America, 1650, being recorded as "a gentleman of high standing." That William Rivers was born in Virginia probably 1765-67 and that his wife was Elizabeth, daughter of William Pool. Married September 20, 1778, in Johnson County, North Carolina, Richard Rivers, Bondsman.

In 1776 Richard Rivers was a delegate to the Halifax (North Carolina) Convention and was Justice of the Peace and Esquire (CRNC 23/944). He died after the 1810 census.

There were many by the name of Rivers in South Carolina before and after the Revolutionary War. These and those in North Carolina may have emigrated from Virginia. The similarity of names bears out this assumption.

6V252: George Rivers gets 1 calf in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, May 1, 1654.

Lists of Emigrants to America, 1600-1700, page 314: John Rivers, "The Westermost of ye Brother Islands, lyeing next to Georges Point with a Tenem^t there in ye occupat of John Rivers count p estimat 20A, 01R, 20Perch, "in the Greate Sound,' 1662-1663."

Page 505: William Rivers in St. James Parish, 1679, owning 1 slave.

"Boddie and Allied Families" by John Thomas Boddie and John Bennet Boddie, page 165: Thomas Rivers was residing in Brunswick County, Virginia, before 1760. His wife was Mary Jones. He made his will 10 March, 1789, and named his children: 1. Martha; 2. Nancy; 3. Robert; 4. Hannah; 5. John; 6. Thomas. Thomas Rivers was born in Brunswick County, Virginia, 9 July, 1757; died in Montgomery County, Tennessee, October, 1827. He married 19 February, 1780, Elizabeth Edmunds, born 10 February, 1764, and moved to Tennessee about 1809.

2V201: William and Richard Rivers contributed £1 to Briery Presbyterian Church, Prince Edward County, Virginia, 1760.

20W(1)196: Robert Rivers, Security for a marriage, December 26, 1769.

American Historical Magazine, 4/34: Aaron Brown's daughter, Elizabeth, became the wife of William Rivers. He died in March, 1809, in Brunswick County, Virginia. His two infant sons, John Harper Rivers and William Wilkins Rivers, born 1804, came with their maternal grandfather, Aaron Brown, to Giles County, Tennessee, circa 1813, he being their guardian. Also the executor of their father's

will. Both John Harper Rivers and William Wilkins Rivers died in 1836.

William Rivers' will said: (a) Aaron Brown, grandfather of my two sons; (b) his two sons were John Harper Rivers and William Wilkins Rivers. The will was dated 1st March, 1809, probated Brunswick County Court, March 29, 1809. His estate was rather large for that time and date. The inventory and appraisement of the estate recorded by the Court February 26, 1810. There were 11 slaves valued at from £20 to £120.

Same, page 39: Merchant license issued to Robert Rivers, March 28, 1787.

Same, page 39: Inventory and appraisement of estate of Thomas Rivers, March 28, 1787.

Same, page 40: Marriage license bonds: Robert Rivers to Jane Harrison, November 8, 1775.

2T248: William Rivers, Security for marriage of Buckner Abernathy to Huldah Rivers, 1778, Greensville County, Virginia.

6T107: Brunswick County, Virginia, "Persons giving aid to American Revolution: At a Court held for Brunswick County, Tuesday, 25th of February, 1782—names certified as giving supplies—Thomas Rivers.

Same, page 244: Lists Robert Rivers, Brunswick County, Virginia, as rendering services to the Continental Army. Descendants of these patriots are eligible to membership in the D. A. R. 25 February, 1782.

D. A. R. Magazine, 69/442: Marriage of Thomas Rivers and Mary ——. His will was dated March 10, 1789, and probated in Brunswick County 1789. His children: 1. Robert; 2. John; 3. Thomas; 4. Nancy; 5. Martha Broadnax; 6. Hannah Moreland.

27W(?)98: (a) Thomas Rivers recommended to the Governor to command company of Light Horse in Militia of Greensville County, Virginia, October 24, 1788. (b) July 23, 1789, Thomas Rivers, Lieutenant Commander of Militia, this county, took oath of office.

At early dates of the settlement of Virginia, the migration was from the coast towards the west or towards the

Carolinas. The first Rivers was found in Isle of Wight County. Subsequent records show Rivers men in Greenville, Brunswick and Prince Edward Counties, all west of Isle of Wight County. It is logical to assume that these men were connected, as that name was found only as indicated.

It may be noted that in the above entries and those to follow the Rivers men were, comparatively, short lived. I found no record of the parents and birth of William Rivers who married Elizabeth Brown and who died in 1809. His parents may have been Robert Rivers, who married Jane Harrison on November 8, 1775. Since Robert Rivers was a grown man in 1769—being Security for a marriage on December 26, 1769—this could be possible.

Benjamin F. Carter in his manuscript history of the Carter Family written in 1904 and in the possession of the writer says on pages 19-20: "William H. Rivers and Julia Flournoy were married the 28th December, 1857, and resided in Tunica County, Mississippi, on a cotton plantation until the Civil War of 1861-65, when they returned to Tennessee and subsequently lived on their farm in Giles County until their deaths. Their children were named William Flournoy, John Harper, Flournoy, Tyree Rodes, William Cannon, Julia and Myra. William F., born —, died —; John H., born —; died 1864. Flournoy, a lawyer, politician and farmer, married Lida Ayvret. He was born October 15, 1858, and his wife on —. They have but one child, named John A. Tyree R. graduated at West Point and is a (1904) Captain of Cavalry in Fourth U. S. Regiment. He was born May 10, 1862, and married Catherine Fenland. They have a daughter born December 1, 1904. William C. also graduated at West Point and is now in Manila on the general army staff with rank of Captain. He was born — and married Mary (called Pollie) Battle of Virginia on —, who was born —. They have children named James —. Myra Rivers was born — and married Captain Horn of the U. S. Artillery service on—. He was born in New Jersey —. On an excursion in New York Harbor with Captain H. and two children, she and a

child were drowned. Her body was recovered at sea and buried there.

“Mary Elizabeth Rivers was born February 8, 1836, and married George Alfred Sykes of Mississippi on October 28, 1856. He was born — and died November 22, 1878, survived by his wife and a son named George Percy, born July 3, 1858, and died November 22, 1878. Mrs. Sykes married the second time on — Dr. William Batte (1823-1918), a widower of Pulaski. She had no Batte children and died 1901.”

John Harper Rivers, one of the “infant sons” mentioned above, married Sarah Myra Rodes and had Cynthia Holland Rivers, who married Benjamin F.⁷ Carter. (See Carter and Rodes Families.)

Benjamin F. Carter in his manuscript history says that John Harper Rivers was born 23 March, 1802.

A study of dates and localities seems to make logical the following:

Thomas Rivers, who was residing in Brunswick County, Virginia, prior to 1760, and who died in 1789, married Mary Jones. His will mentions a son, Robert, who married Jane Harrison November 8, 1775.

I am of the opinion that William Rivers, who married Elizabeth Brown circa 1800, was the son of Robert and Jane Rivers.

William Rivers, was the father of John Harper and William Wilkins (see above).

Line of Descent:

Thomas¹ Rivers married Mary Jones, had

Robert² Rivers married Jane Harrison, had

William³ Rivers married Elizabeth³ Brown, had

John Harper⁴ Rivers married Sarah Myra⁴ Rodes, had

Cynthia Holland⁵ Rivers married Benjamin F. Carter.

(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

RODES FAMILY

The ancestry of *Tyree* Rodes, who was the progenitor of the Rodes Family in Tennessee (see later), is taken from Class C. S 71, Book R688, Copyright No. 1920, in the Congressional Library, Washington, D. C. and from 6V418-420, as well as from other authorities which will be mentioned in the proper places. The data is as follows:

The Rodes Family is of great antiquity. We can easily trace records proving that they flourished for several centuries in the counties of Nottingham, Lincoln, York and Derby in England.

Gerard de Rodes is the first of the family in England to whom reference is made. "Gerard de Rodes was consequently a 'greater baron' and as ambassador he attained a still higher rank. His absence in that capacity will account for his name not occurring on the roll of Magna Charta. Gerard de Rodes was sent as ambassador to foreign parts, 29th March in the ninth year of King John's reign."

It is probable that Gerald de Rodes was one of the family of Counts d' Armagnac and Rodes (Rhodes) mentioned by Froissant who came over with Henry II and Margaret, his mother, from Normandy. It is equally and perhaps more probable that his ancestor was de Rhodes, hereditary knight of Flanders, mentioned in Froissant (and elsewhere) among the nobility of Flanders, who came over to assist William the Conqueror.

I. From Gerard de Rodes, a baron, the capital seat of whose baronetcy was Horn Castle in Lincolnshire, lived in the reign of Henry II (1133-1189), Richard I, John and Henry III, from all of whom he received great honors and by King John (1129-1189) was employed as ambassador. His lineal descendant:

II. William Rodes, of Thorp justa Rotherdam, in the County of York, married Ann, daughter and heir of John Cachehorse, Esq., of Staveley Woodthorpe, in the County of Derby, was the father of:

III. John Rodes, Esq., of Staveley Woodthorpe, whose son:

IV. John Rodes, Esq., was father of:

V. Robert Rodes, Esq., married Elizabeth Wasse and left son and heir:

VI. John Rodes, Esq., of Staveley Woodthorpe, who married Attelina, daughter of Thomas Hewitt, Esq., of Wallis in Yorkshire. John Rodes was Sheriff of Derbyshire and was succeeded, at his death, by his son:

VII. Francis Rodes of Staveley Woodthorpe. He was made Sergeant of the Law 21st August, 1582; Justice of the Common Pleas 29th June, 1585, purchased Barlborough, Great Houghton and other considerable estates. Married Elizabeth, daughter of Brian Sandford, Esq., of Thorp Salvine in Yorkshire and by her had:

VIII. Sir John Rodes, his heir, knighted in 1603. Sold Staveley Woodthorpe to Duke of Portland, and he resided at Barlborough Hall. Married (3rd) Frances, daughter of Marmaduke Constable, Esq., of Holderness, a relict of Henry Cheek. Died in 1639 and was succeeded by his son:

IX. Sir Robert Rodes of Barlborough Hall in the County of Derby; knighted August 9, 1641 at Whitehall, and was created a baronet on the 14th of same month. Married Elizabeth, the daughter and sole heir of Sir John Lacelles, Knight of Sturton and Gateford. She was aged 19 in 1614 and by her had (13th child):

X. Clifton Rodes, of Sturton, age 40 March 16, 1662. He married (2nd) Elizabeth, daughter of John Scrimshire, Esq., of Cottgrave and Notts and had:

XI. John Rodes of Sturton, married Elizabeth, daughter of Simon Jessop of Colton in Staffordshire and had:

XII. Charles Rodes, who went to America and settled in Virginia, "where he is lately married 1695" and who is the founder of the Rodes family in Virginia.

6V420: "So the title to the baronetcy would lie between the descendents of John Rodes of London, Francis Rodes of Maryland and Charles Rodes of Virginia.

RODES FAMILY in America

While positive proof has not yet been found that John Rodes who was born in Virginia in 1697 was the son of Charles Rodes (see XII above) who, we know was living in Virginia at that time, yet the presumptive evidence is strong.

The tradition in every branch of the family has been that this John Rodes was the son of the emigrant, Charles. (The writer has notes in the handwriting of his grandmother, Cynthia Rivers Carter, saying the same thing.) One of the reasons being that the name of Clifton has so frequently appeared both in the English family to which Charles Rodes belonged and in the Virginia family descended from John Rodes. The fact that John Rodes was born June 11, 1697, in or near, what was then New Kent County, now Hanover County, Virginia, makes it hardly doubtful that he was the son of Charles Rodes whose daughter's baptism (February 7, 1702) is recorded in the Register of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County, Virginia. The birth of a son, John, in 1697, and of a daughter, Mary, in 1702 would well accord with a marriage in 1695 (see XII above).

Charles Rodes (XII) who came to Virginia from England and was the first generation in this country married in 1695 and had three children: John, Clifton and Mary.

XIII. John Rodes (6V82-83: John Rodes born Hanover County, Virginia, November 6, 1697—Family Bible—died May 3, 1775) married Mary, (1703-1775) Crawford, daughter of Captain David Crawford of Amherst County, Virginia. (This marriage is mentioned by Cynthia Rivers Carter in her notes. See, also, Crawford Family). He moved to Louisa County, Virginia and, in September, 1765 was appointed vestryman of Frederickville Parish.

American Historical Magazine, 4/44: Vestry Book of Frederickville Parish, Louisa County, Virginia, 1742 to 1787; "At a Vestry meeting held at the Church Below the Mountains, September 25, 1765, John Rodes appointed Vestryman in the Room of Robert Harris, deceased"

Same: 5 November, 1766: John Rodes appointed Vestryman.

Same: October 25, 1773: John Rodes resigns as Vestryman. David Rodes appointed to succeed him, March 14, 1776.

Same: David Rodes appointed Warden for the ensuing year.

Same: 26 December, 1783: Clifton Rodes appointed collector for the present year, in that part of the Parish Laying in Albemarle County.

In October of the next year (1766) John and Mary, his wife, made a deed to their son, Clifton Rodes, conveying land they bought in 1727.

7V82-83: John Rodes was a Justice of the Peace of Albemarle County prior to 1775.

The inventory of his personal estate amounted to £ 1,044, S 17, P. 3, a large property for that time and county.

John and Mary Rodes had issue: Clifton, Charles, John, David, and five girls unnamed.

History of Louisa County, Virginia, page 49: Clifton Rodes was a member of Captain Samuel Waddy's Company of Militia who marched in 1754 under Colonel George Washington to Great Meadows and built Fort Necessity.

John Rodes' will was dated February 12, 1774, proved Albemarle County, Virginia, October, 1775.

XIV. John Rodes of Albemarle County, Virginia, was born November 6, 1729 and died July 15, 1810 (6V83), (Family Bible). 6V83 also says that he was a Justice of the Peace in Albemarle County. He married September 9, 1754 in Albemarle County, Sarah (born May 24, 1736 and died January 31, 1803) daughter of Major Robert Harris of Albemarle County (see Harris Family) who had been a member of the House of Burgesses for Hanover in 1743-44. This marriage is also mentioned in the notes by Cynthia Rivers Carter. They had issue:

XV. Tyree Rodes (see paragraph 1), seventh child, born December 24, 1771 died July 17, 1827. He moved to Giles County, Tennessee, 1807, and settled on an estate he named "Clifton Place" (still existing in 1950 but not in

hands of family). Married April 25, 1811, Cynthia, eldest daughter of Major James Holland of Gilbert Town, North Carolina, (see Holland Family) who was a member of Congress from that State for 18 years. Tyree and Cynthia Holland Rodes were the progenitors of the Rodes in Tennessee.

Tyree and Cynthia Rodes had issue: 1. Sarah Myra, born October 18, 1812 and died March 12, 1865. Married, 1st, John Harper Rivers and 2nd, Colonel Joseph Trotter. 2. James, born June 1, 1814; died April 19, 1824; 3. Robert, born June 24, 1816 and died October 23, 1887, married on October 20, 1840, Sarah Elizabeth Carter, (born April 18, 1823, died July 7, 1863), daughter of Dr. Benjamin Carter and eldest sister of Benjamin Franklin Carter.

6V86: John Harper and Sarah Myra Rivers had: a. William Rivers born June 19, 1831, died 1882 (1892?) who married Julia, daughter of William C. Flournoy of Pulaski, Tennessee. b. Cynthia Holland Rivers, married April 6, 1852, Benjamin F. Carter. There was a third child and second daughter, Mary Elizabeth who married, 1st, George A. Sykes and 2nd, Dr. William Batte—see Rivers Family.

6V324: Mary⁴ Rodes (Clifton³ John² John¹) married, 2nd, Hezekiah P. Murrell and left two daughters: a. Jane Elizabeth married Tyree⁴ Rodes of Giles County, Tennessee and b. Ophelia who married Dr. T. A. Atchison of Nashville, Tennessee.

XVI. Sarah Myers, married John Harper Rivers and had:

XVII. Cynthia Holland, married Benjamin F. Carter and had:

XVIII. Myra Belle, married Gustavus A. Pope and had:

XIX. William Rivers, married Virginia McFerrin and had:

XX. Virginia McFerrin, married Leon J. Livingston and had:

XXI. a. Katherine Pope Livingston, b. William Pope Livingston, c. Richard McFerrin Livingston.

Additional information as to later generations of the Rodes Family may, possibly, be found in the manuscript history of the Carter Family written by Benjamin F. Carter in 1904. A copy of this manuscript will be sent to the State Historical Society at Nashville, Tennessee by the writer.

RUFFIN FAMILY

18W(1)251-254: This family begins with William¹ Ruffin, who appears in the records of Isle of Wight County, Virginia, at a very early date—1660. In June, 1677, a Robert² Ruffin of Surry County is mentioned as heir and administrator of William¹ Ruffin, deceased.

Robert² Ruffin (William¹) lived in Surry County, where he married about 1675, Elizabeth, widow of Captain George Watkins, Clerk of Surry County. His will dated May 18, 1693 was proved July 4, 1693. Names sons, Robert and William; wife, Elizabeth; daughter, Elizabeth. Wife's will proved in Surry County, August 18, 1714 names sons: 3. Robert, 4. William. Daughters: 5. Elizabeth, 6. Jane.

Robert³ Ruffin (William,¹ Robert²) lived in Surry County, where he married Elizabeth — and died. His will proved April 13, 1720 proved February 15, 1720-21 names wife, Elizabeth, and children: . . . 13. Elizabeth.

Elizabeth⁴ Ruffin (Robert,³ Robert,² William¹) married, first, William Kinchen (see Kinchen Family) and second, Richard Cocke. (Have not found the dates of birth, marriage and death of Elizabeth.)

Some branches of the Ruffin families evidently moved to Northampton County, North Carolina as there are many Ruffin wills recorded there.

Line of Descent:

William¹ Ruffin had

William² Ruffin who married Elizabeth Watkins and had
Robert³ Ruffin who married Elizabeth and had

Elizabeth⁴ Ruffin who married William¹ Kinchen and
had

William² Kinchen who married Mary⁵ Dawson and had Elizabeth³ Kinchen who married Philip² Kearney and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Lindsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

SKIPWITH FAMILY

Burke's Peerage, Baronetage and Knighthood 1898, page 1266.

Lineage: This family originally called SCHYPWYE from the town and lordship of Skipwith, in Yorkshire, descends from Robert de Estouteville, Baron of Cottingham, in the time of the Conqueror, of whom the feudal lords of Cottingham, Dugdale treats at length in the Baronage. He married Adeliza, daughter of Ivo, Count de Beaumont.

They had:

(this is lengthy, so only the direct line is taken from this point)

Robert, married Eneburga, daughter of Hugh Fitz Baldoric, great Saxon-Thane. They had:

Patrick (lordship of Skipwith, and took that name). He had:

Sir William, M. P. for York, Judge of Common Pleas—lord chief baron of Exchequer, Chief Justice of Ireland. Married Alice, daughter of Sir William de Hiltoft, Lord of Ingoldnells. They had:

Sir John of Ormesby, died July 15, 1415, high sheriff of Lincolnshire, knighted 1st Henry IV knight in Parliament, married Alice, daughter of Sir Frederick Tilney, Knt. of Tilney in County of Norfolk. They had:

Sir Thomas, died 5th Henry VII, French Wars, knighted in France by Henry V, married Margaret, daughter of John, Lord Willoughby de Eresby. They had:

Sir William, died 1st Henry VII, knighted in France, Temp. Henry VI, sheriff of Lincolnshire, senechal of the

dominion of Borewell, married 2nd Agnes, daughter of Sir John Constable, Knt. of Barton Constable, widow of Sir John St. Quinton. They had:

Sir John, made knight banneret for services against Cornish rebels (with King at battle of Blackheath), high sheriff Lincolnshire, 7th Henry VII, married 1480 Catherine, daughter Richard Fitz Williams, Esq. of Wadsworth. They had:

Sir William, sheriff of Lincolnshire, 18th Henry VIII, married Alice, daughter Sir Lionel Dymoke of Scrivelsby, County of Lincoln. They had:

Henry, Esq. died 1588, purchased Prestwould in Leicestershire, married Jane, daughter of Francis Hall, Esq. of Grantham. They had:

Sir William, Knt. died May 3, 1610, married Margaret, daughter of Roger Cave, Esq. of Stanford. They had:

Sir Henry, Knt. of Prestwould, County Leicester, created Baronet 20 December 1622, sold estate of Prestwould 1653—was a poet—married Amy, daughter of Sir Thomas Kempe, Knt. They had:

Sir Grey, emigrated to Virginia during usurpation of Cromwell, built Prestwould. Diana Skipwith, sister of Sir Grey, married Edward Dale, whose eldest daughter, Katherine, married Captain Thomas Carter.

Line of Descent:

Diana¹³ Skipwith, sister of Sir Grey Skipwith, married Edward Dale and had

Katherine¹⁴ Dale who married Captain Thomas¹ Carter. (See Carter and Pope Lines.)

THOMAS FAMILY

In "Lost Tribes of North Carolina" by Worth S. Ray, in the State Library at Richmond, Virginia is much data and a chart about the Thomas Family. I have extracted pertinent parts.

Page 607: The Thomas Family settled in old Albemarle County, Virginia before and after the end of the 17th

Century. The first Thomas to arrive was a certain John Thomas who embarked on the "Sea Venture" from England with Sir Thomas Gates. The "Sea Venture" founded off Bermuda but the victims built two pinnacles and in 1610 came up the James River.

John Thomas had sons: John, Philip, William, Richard and Mark. John¹ Thomas was born before 1600 and was deceased by 1753 (obviously an error, probably of 100 years).

Page 623, et seq: Captain John Thomas and wife Dorothy (Nugent, pages 185-186) came to York County from Bermuda Islands with Sergeant Samuel Sharpe in 1610. Settled on Queens Creek in York County. He had four sons who also came to York County, Virginia, and settled for a time, and then moved to Isle of Wight County, Virginia (Fleets Va. Abs. Vols. 24-25).

Page 610: Philip Thomas arrived in the Colony by 1635 and lived on Queens Creek.

Page 623 et seq: This John Thomas who came to Virginia with Sergeant Samuel Sharpe was probably of age in 1610, as he was born, perhaps, by 1585 and the four Thomases who settled around him later are believed to have been his sons.

John² Thomas patented lands in Nansemond County, November 19, 1654. His wife's name was (also) Dorothy and they had the following children: Richard, William, John, Elizabeth, Sarah and Katherine.

The writer says he is convinced that the wife of Philip Thomas was Sarah McKinne, a sister of Michael McKinne as the names, Mourning and Priscilla are to be found often in the McKinne Family (Nugent, page 238). Innumerable deeds and instruments appearing in the old records of Isle of Wight County strongly indicate such relationship which tendency is augmented by the continued intimacy that existed between the two families. Both families drifted to North Carolina—Bertie County.

From a study of the text and of the chart on Page 625, I conclude that the following is correct:

John¹ Thomas (b. circa 1585—d. circa 1653) married Dorothy and had

John² Thomas who married Dorothy and had

Richard³ Thomas (died circa 1714) married Elizabeth, daughter of Humphrey Marshall, Isle of Wight County, and had

John⁴ Thomas who married 1st Susannah and 2nd, Mary Lawrence. By his first marriage he had: John, Richard; William, married Martha Robinson; Joseph, married Alice and died 1735; Philip who married Anne and died 1748; Barnaby who married Mary and died 1735; Elizabeth who married, first, John Boddie and second, John Dawson.

Elizabeth⁵ by her first marriage to John Boddie had: William Boddie who married Mary Bennett and John Boddie who married Elizabeth Jeffries—see Jeffries Family. Elizabeth⁵ by her second marriage to John Dawson had: a. Henry Dawson; b. Thomas Dawson; c. Elizabeth (or Mary) Dawson who married William Kinchen, Jr., after Elizabeth Dawson's death, her 2nd husband, Colonel John Dawson married Charity Alston, daughter of John Alston and had John Dawson, Jr. See Dawson Family.

Page 629: John⁴ Thomas was certainly alive in 1711, although it appears he was deceased three years later leaving, at least, seven children, all presumably by his first wife, Susannah Portis. John Thomas married first, Susannah Portis. Deborah Exum, the mother of Susannah Thomas, was, perhaps, a sister of Jeremiah Exum, who, with his wife Ann (Lawrence) joined in a deed of lands belonging to the Lawrence estate to Thomas Pollock in North Carolina in 1704, said lands being in Bertie County, North Carolina. See Exum Family. Deborah (Exum) Portis was alive in 1704.

Jeremiah Exum dates back and shows that he and his wife, Ann, were contemporaneous with Richard³ Thomas and his wife, Elizabeth Marshall, since in 1687, he and his wife, Ann, sold 138 acres of land on Mattacomack Creek, near present Edenton, North Carolina. At that time, however, Jeremiah and his wife, Ann, were "of Isle of Wight County, Virginia." See Exum Family.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Thomas married Dorothy and had

John² Thomas who married Dorothy and had

Richard³ Thomas who married Elizabeth² Marshall and had

John⁴ Thomas who married Susannah Portis and had

Elizabeth⁵ Thomas who married, first, John Boddie, and second, John⁴ Dawson. John and Elizabeth Dawson had

Mary⁵ Dawson who married William² Kinchen and had Elizabeth³ Kinchen who married Philip² Kearney and had

Sarah³ Kearney who married Rev. John⁴ Linndsay and had

Elizabeth⁵ Lindsay who married Dr. Benjamin⁶ Carter.
(See Carter and Pope Lines.)

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS

The Magna Charta was signed in A.D. 1215. There were twenty-five Magna Charta Sureties, only seventeen of whom left issue. Of these seventeen, the following shows descent from seven, through the SKIPWITH line.

America Heraldica, page 128: Skipwith—

During Cromwell's protectorate, the grandson of Henry Skipwith, a distinguished poet of the Elizabethan period, took refuge in Virginia and settled there in the County of Middlesex.

He called his estate "Prestwould," after the Leischester-shire Estate that had belonged so long to his family.

The Skipwiths descend from Robert de Estouteville, Baron of Cottingham (tempo William the Conqueror). They possessed large estates in Counties Lincoln and Warwick; and a baronetcy—that of Newbold—was conferred to a Sir Fulwar Skipwith, and became extinct in 1790. The Baronetcy of Prestwould (created 1622) still exists, having, however, been inherited by Sir Grey Skipwith (of the Virginia family). He left a younger brother in Virginia, who lives on the paternal estates.

Crest: A reel or turnstile, proper.

Motto: Sans Dieu je ne puis (Without God I can do nothing).

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 292—Skipwith:

William d'Albini, lord of Belvoir, *a Surety for the Magna Charta*, had:

William d'Albini, of Belvoir Castle, fourth Baron, who had:

Isabella d'Albini, married Robert, first Baron Roos, of Hamlake, and had:

William De Roos, second Baron Roos of Hamlake Castle, who had:

William De Roos, third Baron Roos, of Hamlake Castle, who had:

Maud De Roos, married John, first Baron Welles, of Gainsby, who had:

Sir John De Welles, second Baron Welles, of Gainsby Castle, who had:

Eudo De Welles, eldest son, o.v.p., who had:

Sir Leo De Welles, K.G., third Baron Welles of Gainsby, who had:

Margaret De Welles, married Sir Thomas Dymoke, of Scrivelsby, and had:

Sir Lionel Dymoke, Scrivelsby manor, who had:

Alice Dymoke, married Sir William Skipwith, of Ormsby manor, Sheriff, and had:

Sir Henry Skipwith, of Prestwould manor, Leicester, who had:

Sir William Skipwith, of Prestwould manor, who had:

Sir Henry Skipwith, first Baronet, of Prestwould manor, who had:

Sir Grey Skipwith, third Baronet, second son, who removed to Virginia. (He was the brother of Diana Skipwith, wife of Edward Dale, whose daughter, Katherine, married Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr.).

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 84 (a complete chapter devoted to William D'Albini, *Surety for Magna Charta*—his descent is given briefly as follows):

Robert de Toden, or Toeny, died 1088, a Norman Baron, was given 80 lordships for distinguished service at Hastings. Erected Belvoir Castle. Married Adela — and had:

William d'Albini, called Briti. It is unknown why he assumed the name d'Albini. King Stephen seized all his possessions because he had adhered to the cause of the Empress Maud. He died about 1155. Married Maud, daughter of Simon St. Liz, the Earl of Huntingdon and Northampton and widow of Robert de Clare (genealogists do not all concede her as the Maud who was his wife). They had:

Ralph, founder of family of Daubeney, died at Acre, 1167, received from Henry II Belvoir Castle and most of the lordships confiscated by King Stephen. Married but name of wife not preserved. They had:

William of Belvoir Castle, *Surety for Magna Charta*, third feudal baron of family; married Margery, daughter of Odonel, Baron d'Umfraville. (See foregoing for continuation of line.)

AMERICANS OF ROYAL DESCENT, Browning, Vol. 1, page 87:

Henry III, King of England, married 1236 Lady Eleanor de Berenger, died 1295, daughter of Raymond, Count de Provence, grandson of Alphonso, King of Arragon; they had:

Prince Edmund Plantagenet, the crouch back, born 1245, died 1295, Earl of Leicester; married, second, Blanche, widow of Henry, King of Navarre, daughter of Robert, Earl of Artois, third son of Louis VIII, King of France; they had:

Henry Plantagenet, Earl of Leicester and Lancaster, died 1345, married Lady Maud, daughter of Patrick de Chaworth; they had:

Lady Joan Plantagenet, married John, third Baron de Mowbray, of Axholme, died 1361; they had:

John de Mowbray, fourth Baron, Lord of Isle of Axholme, died 1368, married Lady Elizabeth Segrave, only child of John, third Lord Segrave (Segrave line: Edward I, King of England, married, second, Margaret, daughter

of Philip III, King of France; they had: Thomas de Brotherton, Earl of Norfolk, Earl Marshall of England, married Lady Alice, daughter of Sir Roger Halys of Harwich; they had: John, third Lord Segrave, married Lady Margaret Plantagenet, Duchess of Norfolk, died 1399; they had: Lady Elizabeth Segrave); they had: Lady Eleanor de Mowbray, married John, second Lord Welles, died 1422, Ambassador to Scotland; they had: Eudo de Welles, married Lady Maud, daughter of Ralph, Baron de Greystock, and his wife, Lady Catherine, daughter of Roger, Lord Clifford; they had: Sir Lionel de Welles, sixth Lord Welles, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, killed in battle of Towton Field, 1461, married, first, Lady Joan, daughter of Sir Robert Waterton, Knt. They had:

Lady Margaret, married Sir Thomas Dymoke. . . . See under foregoing for continuation of line.

AMERICANS OF ROYAL DESCENT, Browning, Vol. 1, page 445:

William the Conqueror, King of England, married Matilda of Flanders, daughter of Baldwin V, seventh Count of Flanders, and his wife, Lady Adela, daughter of Robert the Pious, King of France; they had:

Princess Gundreda, died May 27, 1085, married William de Warren, created Earl of Surrey, died June 24, 1088; they had:

William, second Earl of Warren and Surry, died February 13, 1131, married Lady Isabel de Vermandois, daughter of Hugh the Great, son of Henry I, King of France; they had:

Lady Isabel de Warren, married *Roger Bigod*, created 1189 Earl of Norfolk; Steward of England; *one of the Magna Charta Sureties*; they had:

Hugh Bigod, third Earl of Norfolk, *one of the Magna Charta Sureties*, died 1225, married Lady Maud Marshall (her first husband), daughter of William le Marshall, Earl of Pembroke (sister of William le Marshall, Magna Charta Surety, Vol. II, page 714); they had:

Sir Ralph, third son, married Lady Berta, daughter of Baron Furnival; they had:

Lady Isabel, widow of Gilbert de Lacie, Lord of Meath, married, second, John Fitz-Piers Fitz-Geoffrey, Lord of Berkhamstead and Kirkling, Sheriff of Yorkshire 1234, Lord Justice of Ireland 1246; they had:

John Fitz-John, Chief Justice of Ireland, 1258; he had:

Lady Maud Fitz-John, widow of Gerard de Furnival, married, second, William, sixth Baron de Beauchamp created Earl of Warwick, died 1298 (descendant also of King William the Conqueror); they had:

Lady Isabel, married, first, Patrick de Chaworth, born 1253 (fifth Baron Chaworth of Ogmores Castle, Magna Charta Barons, page 314); they had:

Lady Maud de Chaworth, born 1280, married Henry Plantagenet, third Earl of Lancaster, died 1345, grandson of Henry III, King of England; they had:

Lady Joan Plantagenet, married John, third Baron de Mowbray, died 1361. (See preceding for continuation of this line.)

AMERICANS OF ROYAL DESCENT, Browning, Vol. 1, page 71:

William the Conqueror, King of England, married 1053 Lady Matilda, daughter of Baldwin V, Count of Flanders, by his wife, Princess Adela, daughter of Robert II, King of France, and widow of Richard III, Duke of Normandy; they had:

Princess Gundreda, married William, Earl of Warren, in Normandy, created Earl of Surry, in England, died 1089; they had:

William, second Earl of Warren and Surry, died 1135, married Lady Isabel de Vermandois, widow of Robert, Earl of Mellent, daughter of Hugh Magnus, son of Henry I, King of France; they had:

Lady Gundred de Warren, married Roger de Newburgh, second Earl of Warwick, died 1153; they had:

Waleran de Newburgh, fourth Earl of Warwick, died 1205, married, second, Lady Alice, daughter of John d' Harcourt, Knt., and widow of John de Limsey; they had:

Lady Alice, married William de Manduit, Baron of Hanslope, Heritable Chamberlain of the Exchequer, died 1256; they had:

Lady Isabel, married William, fifth Baron of Beauchamp and Elmley, died 1268; they had: William, sixth Baron, etc.

William, sixth Baron, married Lady Maud Fitz-John. For continuation of this line see above.

AMERICANS OF ROYAL DESCENT, Browning, Vol. 1, page 174:

Dermot Mac Murough, Last King of Leinster, 1074—great-grandson of Diarmaid, the 177th Monarch of all Ireland, married —; they had:

Princess Eva Mac Murough (married 1171) Richard de Clare, called the "Strong Bow," second Earl of Pembroke and Lord Chief Justice of Ireland, died 1176. (*Gilbert de Clare*—brother of Richard, first Earl of Hereford—created Earl of Pembroke 1138, by King Stephen) (*Magna Charta Barons*, p. 89.) They had:

Lady Isabel de Clare, an only child (above), under guardianship of King Henry II and given in marriage by King Richard, the Lion Hearted, before his coronation (above), married 1189 (his first wife) William le Marshall, third Earl of Pembroke, Protector of England during minority of Henry III, Sheriff of Lincoln, Sussex and Gloucester, died 1219; they had:

Lady Maud Marshall, married first *Hugh Bigod*, third Earl of Norfolk, died 1225, *one of the 25 Magna Charta Sureties*; they had:

The Hon. Ralph Bigod, third son, Chief Justice of England, married Lady Berta, daughter of Lord Furnival. See above for continuation of this line.

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 191:

Isabel D'Albini (granddaughter of William d'Albini, *Surety for Magna Charta*, married Robert, sixth Baron Roos of Hamlake, son of William de Roos, fifth Baron, son of Robert de Roos of Fursan, fourth Baron of Hamlake, a *Surety for Magna Charta*.

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 191:

William de Mowbray, third Baron, *Surety for Magna Charta*, had:

Roger, fourth Baron by tenure, had:

Roger, first Baron Mowbray, of Axholm, by writ, married Rose (daughter of Richard, Earl of Hereford and Gloucester, son of Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Hertford and Gloucester, *Magna Charta Surety*, son of Richard de Clare, Earl of Hertford, *Magna Charta Surety*); they had:

John de Mowbray second Baron Mowbray of Axholm, who had:

John, third Baron Mowbray of Axholm, married Joan Plantagenet. See above for continuation of this line.

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 124:

Peter de Roos or Ros, feudal Baron of lordship of Ros, in Holderness, temp. Henry I, died 1157, married Adeline, a sister of Walter d'espec, lord of the Manor of Helmeslac (Hamlake), or Helmesly; they had:

Robert de Ros, second Lord Hamlake Manor, died about 1160, married Sybil de Valoines (who married second Ralph d'Albini); they had:

Ecerard, third Lord Hamlake (very wealthy), died 1186, married 1139, Rose, daughter of William de Trusbut, lord of Wartre, in Holderness, East Riding, Yorkshire; they had:

Lord Robert of Fursan, fourth Baron by tenure, born 1177, erected castles in Northumberland and Yorkshire—a Knight Templar, died 1226-27, married Isabel, natural daughter of William the Lion, King of Scotland (who married first 1183 Robert de Brus, who died 1191); they had:

William, fifth Baron, by tenure, Lord of Hamlake Castle and Trusbut and Wartre, died 1258, active supporter Baronial cause, taken prisoner at Lincoln, married Lucia, daughter of Reginald Fitz-Piers, Lord of Llewleveny Castle, in Wales; they had:

Robert, first Baron Ros by writ, feudal lord of Werke Castle (who married Isabel d'Albini, see *Magna Charta Barons*, page 191). See continuation above.

MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, Browning, page 87:

Count de Beaumont's daughter, Adelhyde, died 1091, married Hugh Grentemaisnil, lord of Hinckley, Ashby-Legers, Northamptonshire—lord steward of King's household, died 1098; they had:

Edeliza or Alice, married before 1103 Roger Bigod, or le Bigot, died 1107, first of family to settle in England—a feudal baron; they had:

Sir Hugh, Knt., lord steward of King's household to Henry I, instrumental in raising Stephen to throne—rewarded with Earldom of East Angeles, or Norfolk, and Suffolk about 1140; made pilgrimage to Holy Land 1177 as Crusader; he married second Juliana (sister of Alberic de Vere, created 1135 Earl of Oxford, and Great High Chamberlain of England, daughter of Alberic, second Baron de Vere of Kensington, great high Chamberlain of England, married Adeliza, daughter of Hugh, Count de Clermont); they had:

Sir Roger Bigod, died before 1150, second Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk, *Magna Charta Surety*, died 1220-21, married first Isabella Plantagenet; they had:

Sir Hugh, *Magna Charta Surety*, third Earl of Norfolk, etc. See above for continuation of this line.

The ancestry of Isabella Plantagenet, wife of Sir Roger Bigod is:

Henry I, of France, had:

Hugh the Great, had:

Isabel or Elizabeth de Vermandois, married William, second Earl Surry, grandson of William the Conqueror; had:

William de Warren, third Earl of Surry, died 1148, married Alice or Adela de Talvas or Talvace, died 1174 (she was daughter of William, Count of Alencon and Ponthieu, who married second Alix, widow of Bertrand Count de Tripoli, daughter of Eudes, Duke of Burgundy, a Crusader, died 1102, great-grandson of Robert the Pious, King of France); they had:

Isabella, died 1199, widow of William de Blois, died 1160, natural son of King Stephen, married 1163-64 Hemeline Plantagenet, died 1202, natural son of Geoffrey Count of

Anjou, fifth Earl of Surry in right of his wife; they had:
Isabella.

From the above it is apparent that the descendants of Katherine Dale, wife of Capt. Thomas Carter, Sr., are also descendants of seven Magna Charta Sureties. They are: 1. William d'Albini; 2. William de Roos of Belvoir Castle; 3. Roger Bigod; 4. Hugh Bigod; 5. William de Mowbray; 6. Richard de Clare; and 7. Gilbert de Clare.

See CONYERS FAMILY: The text gives a John Conyers who married Margaret D'Arcy and shows he is descended from three Magna Charta Barons: 1. Eustace de Vesci; 2. Robert de Ros; and 3. William d'Albini. 2 and 3 are mentioned in the above text—the first is an additional Surety. The chart on the Magna Charta Barons given in 6V410 unfortunately has no dates, otherwise some connection with John Conyers who married Margaret d'Arcy and the American family might be found. Note the similar names in both lines: the de Welles, de Mowbray. Note also that the name "John" is mentioned often: a "Jo: Conniers" in 1634; Charles Conyers in 1694/5; a James Conyers in 1697 and a John Conyers appeared in South Carolina in 1704.

McFERRIN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ALLIED FAMILIES: ABSTON, ACUFF, ANDERSON,
AVERY, BERRY, BRYAN, CAMPBELL, CARTER,
COOKE, CULLOM, CUNNINGHAM, DOUGLASS,
DUNCAN, JOHNSON, LAUGHLIN, MATTHEWS,
PEYTON, PROBART, SOWELL, STOWE, WILLIAM-
SON, YARBROUGH.

McFERRIN FAMILY

There are several accounts concerning the McFerrins in early American history. The name was spelled in various ways in early times: McFerran, McFerron, McFarron, McFarren and McFerrin. Some branches of the family retain some of these methods of spelling the name. The branch with which this narrative deals spells the name McFERRIN.

All accounts agree that several McFerrin brothers emigrated from Ireland and settled in York County, Pennsylvania. From there they went to Augusta County, Virginia, as early as the 1740's. The names of these brothers were: John, James, Thomas, William, Samuel and Martin. Whether all of them came to America at the same time is not known—one authority says that the original emigrants consisted of three brothers and their young families.

From Augusta County, Virginia, the McFerrins went further to the south to the counties of old Fincastle, Botetourt, Montgomery and, finally, to Washington County from whence James³ McFerrin with his young bride emigrated to Tennessee in 1804—see later.

In all the counties in which they lived their names are frequently mentioned. In order that the reader may not be confused by the entries to follow as to counties and dates, it might be proper to give here the date of the organization of these counties. Augusta County was formed from Orange County in 1738; Botetourt County was formed from Augusta County in 1769; old Fincastle County was divided in 1776 into three distinct counties: Washington, Montgomery and Kentuckie (since renamed), and Rockbridge was formed in 1777 from Augusta and Botetourt Counties.

Kegley's Southwestern Virginia says on pages 484-486: The first person to get a portion of Benjamin Borden's "good tracts" of land on Catawba (Creek—in Botetourt County) was John McFerran who purchased from Benjamin, Sr., himself in 1740. This purchase was for 319 acres on the lower end of the lower tract. Here the McFerrans, John, James, Samuel, Thomas and Martin, lived and had various experiences with both their neighbors and the Indians.

James McFerran was killed by the Indians in 1757, and John, Jr., the son of John, was dead in 1761.

There is a tradition in the family that two McFerran boys were along the spring branch in the lot between the house and the road when one was killed and the other taken prisoner by passing Indians. The Preston list gives William McFerran as a prisoner in 1757. (This is the only time that William McFerran appears in the book—however, it establishes relationship with the others.) At this place the present highway runs through the meadow below the house place, while the old road kept around the edge on higher ground. From this place, now the home of William McFerran (a later generation), the old buildings have been removed, but further north and nearer the creek there is an original hewn-log house with rock chimneys which certainly belongs to the early history of the community. (A picture on page 485 is captioned "Spreading Spring Mansion House, Botetourt County.")

Page 166: John McFarrin in Catawba Valley, circa 1745-1750.

Page 179: John McFarran appointed overseer of road, 1746, from the Catawba towards North Carolina.

Page 74: John McFerring living on Caturba (Catawba) Creek, 1751.

Page 78: Thomas McFerran, Yeoman, 220 acres on Persimmon Creek, branch of the James River, 1753.

Page 167: Thomas McFarrin processed land in Capt. John McFarrin's company on Catawba Creek in 1756 but "can't show his lines."

Page 168: Thomas McFarrin in Capt. John McFarrin's company, 1756.

Page 168: Thomas McFarran, processioner, 1756, Catawba, Botetourt County.

Page 254: Thomas, James, John, Samuel McFerrin paid 10 shillings for services in the militia, 1758.

Page 353: John McFerrin, Jr., grant, 100 acres on Lapsley's Run, 14 February, 1761.

Page 360: Under "James River Estates Settled," 1760-1770: James McFerrin's estate appraised by Andrew Hays, Charles Hays and John McGowan, May 19, 1761.

Page 360: James McFerrin's estate to be settled by Archibald Buchanan and Agnes, late Agnes McFerrin, who are also appointed guardian of John McFerrin, orphan of James.

Page 360: John McFerrin, Jr.'s, estate administered by John McFerrin with Thomas McFerrin and William Preston, August 18, 1761.

Page 168: John McPharron takes 319 acres on the Catawba, 1761.

Page 288: Samuel McFerrin, member of party pursuing Indians, March, 1764.

Page 365: John McFarren, proccessioner's return, 1765.

Page 366: Thomas McFerran, proccessioner on Persimmon Run, 1765.

Page 462: Samuel McFerran, with others, ordered to "view a way from Thomas McFarran's by Patterson's Creek to Henry Paulin's on Craig's Creek" circa 1770, Botetourt County.

Page 463: Samuel McFarran and Henry Paulin ordered to open road and keep same in repair, 1770.

Page 472: Samuel McFarran, 120 acres on Catawba Creek, 2 February, 1770.

Page 393: Thomas McFarran, certificate for 552 lbs. hemp, 1771, Botetourt County.

Page 670: For services in protecting inhabitants of Fin-castle County, 1777; John McFarrin paid for 17 days, Martin McFarrin paid for 15 days, Samuel McFarrin paid for 15 days.

Page 387: Martin McFarran, Justice of the Peace, Botetourt County, August, 1779.

Page 481: John McFarran and Amy Rowland of James, married, 1791.

Page 451: 1783—James McFerrin owns 1 horse; Martin McFerrin owns 11 horses and 30 cattle; Samuel McFerrin owns 11 horses, 30 cattle; Thomas McFerrin owns 9 horses, 32 cattle, 1 slave.

Page 469: Samuel McFarron owns 370 acres, July 13, 1791.

Page 481: Jane McFarran and Alexander Guthrie, married, 1791, Botetourt County.

Page 482: Elizabeth McFarran, daughter of Samuel, married James Montgomery, 1794 (marriages of second generation).

Page 471: Martin McFerrin, 3 June, 1796, 935 acres, Botetourt County.

Page 482: Thomas McFerrin and Hannah Van Meter, married, 1799, Botetourt County.

Annals of Southwest Virginia, Summers:

Page 73: 13 March, 1770, Botetourt County, John McFarran "to appoint tithables for each Precinct."

Page 77: John McFarran on grand jury duty Botetourt County, 8 May, 1770.

Page 140: John McFarran on grand jury duty, Botetourt County, 12 November, 1771.

Page 254: Last will and testament of John McFarran, Executors, Thomas and Samuel McFarran, Botetourt County, 14 May, 1776.

Page 997: John McFarran proved a will in Washington County, August 18, 1778.

Page 1008: James McFerren on jury duty, Washington County, 19 November, 1778.

Page 1055: John McFerren, ensign, Washington County militia, 19 April, 1780.

Page 1099: John McFerran appraises an estate, Washington County, 17 April, 1782.

Page 1133: William McFerran on jury duty, Washington County, March 19, 1783.

Page 392: James McFarran appointed Lieutenant in Captain Smith's company, Botetourt County, May 11, 1784.

Page 423: James McFarran granted leave to include all lands in one survey, Botetourt County, July 10, 1787.

Page 1282: William McFerran deeds 250 acres of land on Spring Creek, Washington County, August 1, 1788, to Samuel Machesney for 110 pds.

Page 480: John McFerran and Mary, his wife, deed 67 acres in the Rich Valley on North Fork for 40 pds., Washington County, September 15, 1796.

Page 1258: Elizabeth Martin McFerrin and Thomas Berry, married, Washington County, April 18, 1799, by Rev. Charles Cummings.

Page 518: Early marriages, Botetourt County:

John McFerran and Amy Rowland, 1791.

James McFerran and Mary McFerran, February 11, 1779.

Samuel McFerran and Peacy Vanmeter, July 13, 1803.

Thomas McFerran and Hannah Vanmeter, 1799.

Chalkley's Records of Augusta, County:

Vol. 3, page 80: John McFerrin and Thomas McFerrin appraise estate of James Gatlive, 14 June, 1763.

Chronicles of Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia, Chalkley:

Augusta County:

2/509: Captain George Robinson's List: James McFerrin (McFeron), Lieutenant, 1742.

3/312: 15 March, 1744, David Mitchell, yeoman, to Thomas McFerran, 220 acres on Persimmon Creek, branch of James River.

3/381: 30 November, 1749, B. Borden deeds to John McFerrin, 319 acres of 2,880 acres on Catawba Creek, a branch of the James River.

3/286: 23 May, 1750, John McFerrin attests a deed.

3/442-443: Thomas McFerrin in Capt. John McFerrin's company, November, 1755 and 1756.

2/442: Augusta Parish Book, page 157. Thomas McFerrin in Capt. John McFerrin's company, 27 November, 1755. He carried chain for Royal Company for survey about 1769-71.

2/443: Augusta Parish Book, page 169; 1756, Thomas McFerrin in Capt. John McFerrin's company on Catawba Creek.

2/511: James McFerrin, killed, October, 1757, at Catawba Creek. William McFerrin, prisoner, October, 1757, at Catawba Creek.

2V403: A register of persons who have been either killed, wounded or taken prisoner by the enemy in Augusta County, Virginia, October, 1757: James McFerrin, Catawba, killed; William McFerrin, Catawba, prisoner. (Also in *Annals of Augusta County, Virginia*, by Waddell, page 157.) See "There is a tradition in the family . . .," above.

7H199: James, John, Samuel and Thomas McFerrin paid 10s each for services in militia, Augusta County, September, 1758.

Chronicles of Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia, Chalkley:

3/62: 19 May, 1761, Archibald Buchanan's bond, administrator of estate of James McFerrin. Mentions Agnes Buchanan, evidently then the wife of Archibald Buchanan.

3/65: August 15, 1761, James McFerrin's appraisement of an estate.

3/18: August, 1761, John McFerrin's bond with Thomas McFerrin and William Preston, as administrators of estate of John McFerrin, Jr.

3/78: 18 August, 1761, Archibald Buchanan's bond as guardian of John McFerrin, orphan of James McFerrin.

3/376: 18 August, 1761, John McFerrin attests a deed.

3/67: 18 November, 1761, appraisement of estate of John McFerrin, Jr.

3/80: John McFerrin, Thomas McFerrin and Pat Shankey appraise an estate, June 14, 1763.

2/450: Augusta Parish Book, page 381: 1765, Processioners Return for John McFarren.

2/452: Augusta Parish Book, page 408: 1765, Thomas McFerrin, Processioner on Persimmon Run. Page 409: Same for John McFerrin.

2/428: Processioners appointed, . . . Thomas McFerran . . . on waters of Cuttawba and James River on south side.

3/485: Shows John McFerrin, Thomas McFerrin, Samuel McFerrin and Martin McFerrin living in Augusta County, 2 February, 1769.

3/486: Thomas McFerran and Samuel McFerran living in Augusta County, Virginia, April 25, 1769.

From the above we are able to trace the McFerrins from Pennsylvania in the 1740's to Augusta County, Virginia, in the 1740's, to Botetourt County, Virginia, in the 1750's, 1760's and 1770's, and to Washington County in the 1780's and 1790's. The latter county is next to the Tennessee line.

We also see William McFerrin mentioned twice in Washington County. He is the William McFerrin who married Jane Laughlin—see later.

We see, too, marriages between the McFerrins and the Berrys.

The first authentic ancestor of this line found was William¹ McFerrin who was, doubtless, one of the five brothers who emigrated with their young families from Ireland and settled in York County, Pennsylvania. It is probable that the brothers remained but a short time in Pennsylvania and moved to Augusta County, Virginia, and thence further south towards the Tennessee line. I have found no record of the name of the wife of this William McFerrin, nor of the dates of his birth or death, although he is buried in the old "Green Spring" Presbyterian Churchyard, Washington County, Virginia.

"John B. McFerrin—A Biography" by Fitzgerald, page 21: "This genealogical glance shows a prolific, sturdy stock, full of vitality, addicted to fighting, praying and matrimony."

William² McFerrin, the son of William¹ McFerrin, was born in York County, Pennsylvania, in 1755 and removed with his father to Augusta County, Virginia, in 1765. He joined the Revolutionary Army in 1776 and served until the close of the War of Independence. His service was as follows: From August, 1776, four months in Captain Lyle's company, Colonel Christie's regiment, against the Cherokee Indians; in the spring of 1777, two months in Captain Ewen's company; in 1778, one month in Captain Newell's company and one month in Captain Black's company. He then removed to Washington County, Virginia, in 1779, and in the spring of that year served six weeks in Captain Samuel Meek's company; from October, 1779, he served three month's in Captain Cane's company, Colonel Tipton's

regiment; and from September, 1780, he served three months in Captain Colvin's company, Colonel Campbell's regiment, and was in the battle of King's Mountain. (This is also in 35V300-301.)

In 1780 he married Jane Laughlin, daughter of James Laughlin and his wife, formerly a Miss Duncan. These Duncans indulged in a pardonable family tradition that they were remotely connected with the once royal family of Scotland.

The William McFerrins lived about nine miles south of Abingdon, Virginia, on the south fork of the Holston River and close to the Tennessee line.

"McFerrin Family of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Tennessee" says: There were three McFerrin brothers who came with their families from Ireland and settled in York County, Pennsylvania, between 1740 and 1750. William² McFerrin was the son of one of these brothers. He was born in York County in 1755 and died in 1845. He joined the Army in the beginning of the Revolutionary War in 1776 and served until its close. In 1779 he moved with his family to a farm near Abingdon, Virginia, in Washington County, where, in 1780, he married Jane Laughlin, daughter of James Laughlin. (See Laughlin Family.) He and his wife lived on the farm and raised their eight children, and it was there that James³ McFerrin was born March 22, 1784. . . . William McFerrin enlisted in the Revolutionary War in 1776, served until September 1, 1780. He was engaged in battle with the Cherokee Indians and was at the battle of King's Mountain. . . . (Revolutionary War Records, Washington, D. C.)

"John B. McFerrin—A Biography" by Fitzgerald, page 18: The William McFerrin family resided near the famous "Green Spring Meeting House" erected by the Presbyterians where they had regular ministry and able preaching. . . . He lived to be ninety years old and died in the State of Mississippi. . . . He was a Presbyterian of liberal views. . . .

No record has been found of the date of death of William² McFerrin's wife, Jane Laughlin, nor the place of

burial, but presume that she died and was buried in Mississippi.

The children of William² McFerrin and his wife, Jane Laughlin McFerrin, were: a. James; b. William; c. Burton L.; d. Betsy, married Thomas Berry; e. Jane, married John B. Gilliland; f. Margaret, married James Gilliland; g. Tabitha, married Burton L. Smith; h. Eleanor D., married Cullen Curlee; i. Mary, married Poston Stovall.

James³ McFerrin (William,² William¹) was the second child and first son of William² McFerrin and his wife, Jane Laughlin McFerrin. He was born March 22, 1784, and died in Tipton County, Tennessee, September 4, 1840, and is buried in the Charleston Churchyard. On his twentieth birthday he married Jane Campbell Berry (born 1786, died —), who was two years younger. (See Berry Family.)

James McFerrin and his bride, riding the same horse, emigrated to Rutherford County, Tennessee, in 1804 and settled on the east fork of Stones River, in what is now part of Cannon County. He was a farmer and an expert rifleman. When it became necessary to fight the Indians, he raised a company of which he was elected captain. His company served for a time at Natchez, Mississippi, and then returned home. Then came trouble with the Creek Indians, and he again took the field, serving under General Andrew Jackson (Old Hickory), afterward President of the United States, from whom he won confidence and special commendation for his notable courage and skill. The Creek War ended and he returned to his home, but his military spirit still burned and he became Major and Colonel in the State Militia. Colonel McFerrin was converted to Methodism in 1820 and was an active preacher for the remainder of his life. He removed, with his family to Limestone County, Alabama, in 1822 and in 1833 to Tipton County, Tennessee, where he died September 4, 1840. He was a member of the General Conference, M. E. Church, 1828-32. His wife, Jane Campbell (Berry) McFerrin, died at the home of her son, James H. McFerrin, a planter, near Vandale, Cross County, Arkansas, on — and is buried there.

“McFerrin Family of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Tennessee”: Rev. James McFerrin was the second child and first son of William² McFerrin and Jane McFerrin, and was born March 22, 1784. On his twentieth birthday he married Jane Campbell Berry of “Berry Ironworks,” near Holston, Virginia. Soon after he married, he and his wife moved, by riding the same horse, to Rutherford County, Tennessee, where he lived until his death September 4, 1840. His wife, Jane Campbell Berry, was born in 1786. She was connected with the families of Governor Berry of Tennessee and Senator Berry of Arkansas. He and his wife had eight children, five girls and three boys. Eliza McFerrin, daughter of Rev. James McFerrin, was born July 22, 1812, and died in 1871. With reference to Rev. James McFerrin, he is buried in the Charleston Graveyard, Phelan, Tipton County, Tennessee, and inscribed on his gravestone is the following: “Rev. James McFerrin, born in Washington County, Virginia, March 22, 1784. Died September 4, 1840. He served his country as a military officer, the Methodist Church as an esteemed minister for twenty years, and died in the full hope of blissful immortality.”

The above is in error where it says that Rev. James McFerrin and his wife had five girls and three boys. They had five sons and three daughters, as follows: a. John Berry—see later; b. Sallie, married John Gilliland; c. Thomas, died in infancy in 1811; d. Nancy, married John Applewhite; e. James Henderson, born in Rutherford County, Tennessee, June 2, 1815, removed to Arkansas about 1860 and died November 9, 1876; he married Rebecca Massey (born in Virginia March 13, 1832, died November 6, 1876), daughter of Alanson Massey; f. Rev. Anderson Purdy; g. Rev. William M. (the latter two were ministers of the M. E. Church, South); h. Eliza (born 1812, died 1871), married, first, Noah Smith by whom she had three daughters, and second, Rev. Samuel Gilliland.

John Berry⁴ McFerrin (James,³ William,² William¹), the son of James³ McFerrin and his wife, Jane Campbell (Berry) McFerrin, was born June 15, 1807, in Rutherford County, Tennessee, and died in Nashville, Tennessee, May

10, 1887. He was one of the most notable and outstanding ministers of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. He served as a chaplain in the Confederate Army. To give even a short synopsis of his life would require many pages, and it is fully covered in "John B. McFerrin—A Biography" by O. P. Fitzgerald, D.D., published in 1888, and in other publications. He was a warm friend of President James K. Polk, was with him when he died and delivered the funeral oration. John Berry McFerrin was married, first, to Almyra Avery Probart (born June 20, 1813, died May 11, 1854) in Davidson County, Tennessee, September 18, 1833. By this marriage they had the following children:

a. Sarah Jane (born March 6, 1842, died September 5, 1906), married Judge James Anderson of Sumner County, Tennessee. Judge Anderson and his wife, Sarah Jane McFerrin, had the following children:

(1) John McFerrin (born June 20, 1862, died December 31, 1933), married Lily Morrow; (2) William Wade (born May 19, 1864, died April 18, 1950), married Mary Wright; (3) James Douglass (born October 6, 1867, died July 24, 1948), married Willie Staley; (4) Walter Leak (born December 4, 1869), married Florida Franklin; (5) Ewell Avery (born December 31, 1871, died November 26, 1899; (6) Mary Almyra (born November 28, 1873), married John Soper; (7) Virginia Lou (born November 1, 1875), married R. C. W. Puryear; (8) Dora (born March 22, 1878, died October 13, 1902); (9) Frank Weakley (born March 30, 1883); (10) Janie Probart (born October 4, 1886, died May 16, 1930), married Ed Anderson.

b. James William (born July 14, 1846; killed in a railroad accident near Birmingham, Alabama, November 16, 1880), married Dora Cooke (died April 25, 1875), daughter of Watson M. Cooke. He served in Bates' Brigade, Confederate Army, was wounded at the battle of Chickamauga, September, 1863. Later in the war he was captured and remained a prisoner until the close of the war. They had one child, Annie, who married Sam McNish.

c. John Anderson—see later.

d. Elizabeth Johnson (born December 14, 1849, died June 21, 1854).

e. Almyra Probart (born May 8, 1854, died April 1, 1910), married Rev. Peyton O. Sowell, a minister of the M. E. Church, South. They had one daughter, Tennessee McFerrin (born August 29, 1879, died January 26, 1942), who married Prof. Charles S. Williamson, Jr., of Tulane University, and lived in New Orleans. The Williamsons have two children: Charles and Almyra.

John Berry⁴ McFerrin was married the second time to Cynthia Tennessee McGavock (born July 26, 1827, died September 18, 1917) on November 12, 1855. By this second marriage there were born two daughters: a. Katherine Louise (born December 24, 1856, died August 8, 1913), married William Robert Bryan February 2, 1881, and had two children, (1) Claiborne Nelson (born January 18, 1883, died June 26, 1937), who married Henrietta Richardson and had one daughter, (2) Louise (born October 26, 1892), married T. Wilburn Crutcher November 16, 1915, and had four children, two sons and two daughters. b. Betty McGavock (born July 23, 1861, died June 2, 1924), married James Henry Yarbrough and had one daughter, Margaret McGavock (born November 30, 1887), who married Gabriel Cannon and had one son and one daughter.

John Anderson⁵ McFerrin (John Berry,⁴ James,³ William,² William¹) was born March 26, 1848, and died March 1, 1912. He was the third child and second son of John Berry McFerrin and his first wife, Almyra Avery Probart. He was the third of the McFerrin line to be ministers of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South. John Anderson served the Church for forty years. In 1905 he retired from active work due to ill health, his last appointment being Presiding Elder of the Columbia District of the M. E. Church, South. After his retirement he lived in Gallatin, Tennessee, and later in Nashville, Tennessee, where he died. He was very much like his father, John B. McFerrin, in personal and physical characteristics with an unusual strength of character. He had a fine sense of humor, liked a good story or a joke and was considerate of the ideas of

others. Never neutral on any important issue, he was tolerant and liberal in his views.

On June 28, 1871, he married Martha Douglass Abston (born December 23, 1850, and died January 24, 1924), the youngest daughter of Merry C. Abston and Mary Ann (Douglass) Abston—see Abston Family.

John Anderson⁵ McFerrin and his wife, Martha Abston McFerrin, had the following children:

a. John Berry (born June 17, 1872, died August 15, 1918), married Lewise McGavock Wilson. There were no children by this marriage.

b. Mary Douglass (born January 3, 1875), married James Cunningham (born June 12, 1873) on August 22, 1900. They have one child, James (born July 9, 1918). They live in Hartsville, Tennessee.

c. Almyra Anderson (born August 22, 1877), married Rev. J. J. Stowe (born August 7, 1867), a minister of the M. E. Church, South, on December 7, 1904, and now live in Nashville, Tennessee. They had the following children: (1) John Ashley (born April 9, 1906, died May 12, 1906; (2) J. Joel, Jr. (born June 11, 1908); (3) Martha McFerrin (born May 23, 1910, died May 10, 1931); (4) William McFerrin (born January 28, 1913); (5) Myra India (born December 31, 1914, died June 22, 1916).

d. James Abston (born March 8, 1880, died July 14, 1935), married on October 11, 1911, Annie Hall Acuff (born November 21, 1891), daughter of Clyde Welson Acuff and Martha Kittrell Acuff. They had the following children: (1) Martha Ann (born July 18, 1914, died July 24, 1914); (2) Infant son (born May 13, 1917, died May 14, 1917); (3) Elizabeth (born March 20, 1920); (4) Virginia Douglass (born December 25, 1925).

e. Virginia—see later.

f. George Pierce (born December 26, 1884), married Alla Roddy Cullom (born April 20, 1890, died June 16, 1922) on March 25, 1920. She was the daughter of Webster Burr Cullom and Martha Winfield Cullom.

g. Paul (born December 26, 1886, died December 31, 1886).

h. Merry Carter (born January 25, 1888, died February 25, 1925), married Helen Carter (born March 23, 1889) on December 15, 1910. They had one son, John Carter (born September 15, 1911), who now lives in Mobile, Alabama.

6. Virginia⁶ (John A.,⁵ John B.,⁴ James,³ William,² William¹) (born April 17, 1882), married William Rivers Pope (born January 7, 1880) on October 20, 1903. See Pope Family.

Line of Descent:

William¹ McFerrin had

William² McFerrin married Jane Laughlin and had

James³ McFerrin married Jane Campbell Berry and had

John Berry⁴ McFerrin married Almyra Avery Probart and had

John Anderson⁵ McFerrin married Martha Douglass Abston and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin married William R. Pope and had

Virginia⁷ M. Pope married Leon J. Livingston and had

a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.

b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.

c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

ABSTON FAMILY

History of Pittsylvania County, Virginia, by Clement has the following:

Page 44, Footnote: Joshua Abston was son of Francis Abston whose will was probated in Halifax County, Virginia, in 1752, naming sons: William, John, Jesse, Joshua. John Ward was a witness to the will. Joshua Abston married Rachael Clement, daughter of Capt. Benjamin Clement, and moved to South Carolina.

Page 45, Footnote: Capt. Benjamin Clement was born circa 1700 and was the son of William Clement who patented 1,225 acres in Amelia County in 1735 and moved thereto. William Clement was a Justice of the Peace and sheriff of Amelia County. His will, proved in 1760, named sons: Benjamin, William, John and Francis, and daughters: Elizabeth Ford, Ellyson, Anne and Barsheba Major.

7H209: John Abston paid £6 S35 for services in the militia of Bedford County, Virginia, September, 1758, and, for provisions furnished by sundry inhabitants of Bedford County to the militia of said county: To John Abston £6 S2, September, 1758.

23V375: John Ahston, 300 acres and Joshua Ahston, 250 acres, Tithables, Pittsylvania County, Virginia, 1767. (The "h" in the names above must have been a misprint or poor handwriting on the part of the then clerks—see next entry.)

History of Pittsylvania County, page 279: Joshua Abston and John Abston, Tithables, 1767.

Same, page 44: Joshua Abston was nominated a captain of militia (with others), 27 September, 1775.

Same, page 166: Along the Staunton River in the northern part of the county were living . . . Joshua Abston . . ., 1777.

Pittsylvania and Bedford Counties have a common boundary. Here we see the Abstons first in Halifax County which has a common boundary with Pittsylvania on the west, then in Pittsylvania County and finally in Bedford County.

Letter, Veterans' Administration, Bureau of Pensions, Washington, D. C., April 15, 1931: Extract; Merry C. Abston was born about 1796 in Bedford County, Virginia. He enlisted in Nashville, Tennessee, and served eight months as a private in Capt. Eli Hammond's Company of U. S. Mounted Rangers and was discharged August 14, 1813. He enlisted and served from September 2, 1814, to September 1, 1815, in Captain Donaldson's Company of Tennessee Militia. He served a tour of five months in an expedition against the Seminole Indians as Third Lieutenant in Capt. Isaac Watkin's Company, Colonel Thomas Williamson's Second Regiment of Tennessee Mounted Gunmen and was discharged June 30, 1818. He died November 29, 1860, in Sumner County, Tennessee. Soldier married April 5, 1832, in Sumner County, Tennessee, Mary Ann Douglass. She died May 10, 1899.

From the above, it is evident that Merry C. Abston, who was born in Bedford County, Virginia, about 1796, was the son of John Abston who was in Bedford County in 1758 and Pittsylvania County in 1767 or, due to the space of 38 years between the two dates above, Merry C. may have been the grandson of John.

Merry C. Abston (born circa 1796, died November 26, 1860) married Mary Ann Douglass (born June 30, 1810, died May 10, 1899) on April 5, 1832. They had two sons and eight daughters; the youngest child, Martha Douglas, married John Anderson McFerrin on June 28, 1871—see McFerrin Family.

Line of Descent:

Francis¹ Abston had

Joshua² Abston who had

John³ Abston who had

Merry C.⁴ Abston who married Mary Ann⁵ Douglass and had

Martha Douglass⁵ Abston who married John A.⁵ McFerrin and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J. Livingston and had

a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.

b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.

c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

COLONEL WAIGHTSTILL AVERY

While there is, apparently, no real relation between Colonel Avery and the McFerrin Family, his name has been mentioned in two instances and it might be well to give his history.

7V124: Waightstill Avery, North Carolina, was one of a commission May, 1777 which concluded a treaty with the Indians at the "Long Island of the Holston" (Haywood's History of Tennessee).

"Lost Tribes of North Carolina" by Worth S. Ray, page 315: Waightstill Avery signed the Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, May 20, 1775.

Same, page 418: Avery was a native of Groton, Connecticut, born 1747. He graduated from Princeton University, 1766. He married a Mrs. Frank, daughter of William Probart, a wealthy merchant of Snow Hill, Maryland, in 1778. In 1777 he was chosen one of the two members to represent Mecklenburg in the House of Commons and served on a commission to revise the public laws of the state. In 1778 he was appointed and commissioned Attorney-General for North Carolina. He lived in Jones County but moved to Burke County. He represented Burke County several terms in the Legislature. He had several distinguished sons: Colonel Waightstill W. Avery, Colonel Moulton Avery and Judge Alphonso C. Avery. He was related to the Lenoir family of Revolutionary fame.

4Viii, 112: Quotes someone as saying that the Mecklenburg Declaration has no base of facts, rather the contrary. Further, that Avery, three months after the alleged Declaration, with others, indignantly denied such and acknowledged his allegiance to the British Crown.

Ashe's History of North Carolina, page 457: Waightstill Avery was at the Declaration of Mecklenburg, 1775.

There being no blood connection between the Averys and any of the families allied to the McFerrin Family no line of descent is given.

BERRY FAMILY

The Berry Family came from Ireland and was one of large connections in Virginia.

There was a John Berry who patented 100 acres on the James River (area not specified but undoubtedly near its mouth) in 1620. Some were in (old) Patuxent County, in 1669, and a number of them were in Middlesex County, Virginia, 1726 to 1765. I have not connected them with the Berrys in Southwestern Virginia.

The principal "locale" of the Berrys who intermarried with the McFerrin Family seems to have been in Augusta County, Virginia and southwards towards the Tennessee line. They are frequently mentioned in Botetourt, old Fincastle and Washington counties. Where they settled when they first came from Ireland is now unknown but it is quite probable that they might have first settled in Pennsylvania as did the McFerrins and the Laughlins who also came from Ireland, and that they emigrated to Augusta County, Virginia about the time those two families did as there was a large migration from Pennsylvania southward in the early part of the 18th Century.

The first record of the Berry Family in Augusta County, Virginia, is from Chalkley's Records of Augusta County:

Vol. 3, page 14: Elizabeth E. Berry, Executrix of James Berry, 29 November, 1749.

3/15: James Berry's estate appraised 7 March, 1750.

3/20: James Berry's bond as guardian of John, James and William Berry, orphans of James Berry, 28 February, 1750/51.

1/57: John Berry, March 21, 1753 directed to assist in keeping a road open.

3/382: John Berry purchases 427 acres for £105, 18 May, 1762.

3/415: John Berry sells to William Berry, 10 November, 1764 427 acres for £100.

3/479: John Berry buys 120 acres on James River opposite the mouth of Cedar Creek, 11 June, 1768 from James McDowell and Frances.

2/403, 404: John Berry, Jr.'s name in Fee Book, 1767 and 1768.

3/118: John Berry's will—estate to John Berry, son of James, deceased; to John Berry, son of William Berry; to John Berry, son of Frances Berry, 10 October, 1770. Notice three John Berry's, all sons of different fathers.

3/159: John Berry's estate settled, 16 May, 1781. All legacies paid—funeral liquor, £1.7.0—coffin paid for.

Southwestern Virginia by Kegley—

Page 185, 1755: Sheriff turns in tax lists—John Berry “not found,” Botetourt County.

Page 426: John Berry, May 10, 1770, Survey, 48 acres on south side of James River, Botetourt County.

Annals of Southwest Virginia, 1769-1800, by Summers—

Page 1354: John Berry with others (among them were Alex Laughlin, Thos. Berry, Andrew Berry, Andrew McFarren, William Berry and William Berry) sign a call to Rev. Charles Cummings, 1772 “for united congregations of Ebbing and Sinking Springs on Holston’s River, Botetourt County.” (Thomas L. Preston in his “Historical Sketches and Reminiscences of the Octogenarian,” page 19 says that Sinking Springs is not a mile northwest of the town of Abingdon and Ebbing Springs is about 12 miles east of Abingdon on the middle fork of the Holston. He also says on page 18, “on the middle forks of the Holston were . . . the Berrys. . . .” This was circa 1775.) Abingdon is now in Washington County.

Page 550: John Berry grantor of 79 acres on south side of James River, Botetourt County, 19 June, 1773.

Page 555: John Berry and Jane, his wife, granted 120 acres on south side of the James River, opposite mouth of Cedar Creek, November 10, 1775, Botetourt County. (Here is the John Berry and his wife, Jane (Campbell) Berry, whose daughter, Jane Campbell Berry, married James³ McFerrin.)

Page 1347: John Berry’s will was probated August 15, 1786 in Washington County, Virginia. Estate to wife and children—no names given.

Washington County, Virginia, was organized in 1776 and the following notes are taken from the same authority above:

Page 958: John Berry recommended for lieutenant in Washington County Militia, February 16, 1777.

Page 989: John Berry and William Berry on grand jury duty, Washington County, May 19, 1778.

Page 974: John Berry on grand jury duty, 25 November, 1777.

Page 1043: John Berry on jury, Washington County, August 18, 1779.

Page 1074: John Berry on jury duty, Washington County, March 21, 1781.

Page 1089: John Berry on grand jury, November 20, 1781, Washington County.

Page 1187: John Berry, with others, sign, appointing sheriff for Washington County, August 18, 1784.

Page 117: John Berry's will dated December 10, 1780 was probated August 15, 1786. Estate to wife and children—no names mentioned.

Chronicles of Scotch-Irish Settlement in Virginia-Chalkley; Augusta County:

Vol. 1, page 47: August 29, 1751, James Berry, guardian of James Berry, orphan of James Berry, complains of John Jones, in whose custody the orphan is, that he abuses him.

1/49: November 30, 1751, James Berry, guardians of the orphans of James Berry, deceased, complains that John Jones who married the widow of James Berry, is wasting the estate.

1/79: John Berry, orphan of James Berry, aged 15 years, chose McGill as his guardian, December 21, 1757.

1/208: October 19, 1779, John Berry proved his services as soldier in America in the war between Great Britain and France under Major General Jeffrey Amherst. Granted certificate for 50 acres, agreeable to the King's Proclamation, 1763.

1/127: John Berry, living May 20, 1766 in Augusta County.

1/145: John Berry received certificate for hemp March 16, 1768.

2/281: John Berry witnessed marriage April 8, 1786 in Washington County.

2/281, 284: John Berry, surety for two marriages, November 15, 1785 in Washington County.

There were so many people by the name of Berry in Southwestern Virginia from about 1740 until the end of the 18th Century that it has been somewhat difficult to definitely establish relationship. However, by careful consideration

of names, dates and places, I am of the opinion that the following is correct:

We know that James Berry, the first of the name I found in Augusta County, Virginia, died in that county in 1749, as his widow, Elizabeth, qualified as executrix late that year. They had John, who was born in Augusta County in 1740 and died in Washington County in 1786—see his will above. He married circa 1765 Jane Campbell who was born in Augusta County April 10, 1743, and died in Washington County, Virginia, on September 27, 1833, being over ninety years of age. I am convinced that Jane Campbell was the daughter of Alexander Campbell who died in Augusta County in 1753—see Campbell Family (though I do not state this as a fact).

John Berry owned some of the earlier iron works in Washington County. According to “Annals of Southwest Virginia” by Summers.

John Berry was a Revolutionary soldier and was at the battle of Kings’ Mountain.

“John B. McFerrin—A Biography” by Fitzgerald says on page 20: The father of John B. McFerrin (James) was married on his twentieth birthday to Jane Campbell Berry who was two years younger. (This would make Jane born in 1786 and the year of their marriage as 1804.) She was the youngest of eight children, the daughter of John Berry and Jane Campbell Berry. Jane Campbell Berry was born on the banks of the Holston River, at a place known as “Berry’s Iron Works,” about three miles from the birth-place of her husband. Her father was connected with a large family, and possessed the remarkable physical strength which was a family characteristic. He was a zealous Presbyterian and a ruling elder in that church. His wife’s widowhood lasted more than thirty years. She lived to be more than ninety years of age, and was at last buried in the same grave as the husband of her youth. She reared eight children, who took respectable places in society. They were all married; the first born of each family was a son, and his name was John Berry.

Line of Descent:

James¹ Berry married Elizabeth and had
John² Berry who married Jane² Campbell and had
Jane Campbell³ Berry who married James³ McFerrin
and had

John Berry⁴ McFerrin who married Almyra Avery⁵
Probart and had

John A.⁵ McFerrin who married Martha Douglass⁵
Abston and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope
and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J.² Living-
ston and had

- a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston
- b. William Pope⁸ Livingston
- c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

CAMPBELL FAMILY

6V430: John Campbell married Elizabeth Walker in 1721 in Ireland and came to America with John Walker (father of Elizabeth) in 1730, bringing with them several children. Page 431: Robert, one of these, married Rebecca Wallace. He was appointed one of the magistrates of Augusta County.

Annals of Augusta County, Waddell, page 148: Robert Campbell, Justice of the Peace, Augusta County, 1745.

7V126: John Campbell came from Ireland to America in 1726 with five or six grown sons, settled first in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, and came to Augusta County in 1738 with his sons: Patrick, Robert and David. David was the father of Charles Campbell, who was the father of General William Campbell (born 1745), the King's Mountain hero, and his sister, Margaret, who married Arthur Campbell, who was very prominent in Western Virginia history.

David, son of John, the immigrant, was father of Colonel Arthur Campbell, who was born in Augusta County in 1742 and died in 1811.

Annals of Augusta County, Waddell, page 149: Margaret, daughter of David and Mary Campbell, married the David Campbell who erected a block house in Tennessee widely known as "Campbell's Station," near Knoxville. Her death occurred in 1799 at the age of 51.

"Historical Reminiscences of the Octogenarian" by Thos. L. Preston, page 38: Arthur Campbell, born in Augusta County, 1742. General William Campbell was also a native of Augusta County (died August 22, 1781). His father was Charles Campbell, who died in 1767.

William Campbell, only son of Charles, was born 1745. In a short time after his father's death, the whole family moved to the Holston, now in Washington County, then in Augusta County. The second daughter, Jane, married Thomas Tate.

David Campbell, son of John and brother of Patrick and Robert, married in Augusta County Mary Hamilton and had seven sons and six daughters, all of whom emigrated to the Holston. The sons are named. The daughters were: Margaret, Mary, Martha, Sarah and Ann. The sixth daughter's name not given. (Could it have been "Jane"?)

John Campbell, oldest son of David, in 1765 purchased a tract of land called the "Royal Oak," near the head waters of the Holston.

Kegley's "Virginia Frontier," page 197: James Campbell married Lettice Taylor (no date), daughter of Isaac Taylor and Isabel Taylor of Kennedy's Mill Creek. The Campbells lived on the Roanoke from 1742 until the Indian invasions of 1755 and 1756. In 1768, the Campbells emigrated to the waters of Cripple Creek, a branch of the New River, and again became important frontier settlers.

6V431: Andrew McPheeters married Jane Campbell, daughter of John and Elizabeth Campbell (no date given). "Records of Augusta County" by Chalkley, Vol. 3, page 49: 2 March, 1753, Alexander Campbell's will, daughters: Jane, Mary, Florence; wife (not named) to get maintenance from the estate.

Several other families of Campbells not related as far as known were amongst the early settlers of Augusta County.

In trying to identify the Jane Campbell who was born in Augusta County in 1743 and married John Berry about 1765—see Berry Family. All the “Jane” Campbells found are properly accounted for except the Jane Campbell who was the daughter of Alexander Campbell—see above.

Now, since John Berry was in Augusta County in 1765 when he married a Jane Campbell, I am convinced that his wife was the daughter of Alexander Campbell.

Line of Descent:

Alexander¹ Campbell had

Jane² Campbell who married John² Berry and had

Jane Campbell³ Berry who married James³ McFerrin and had

John Berry⁴ McFerrin who married Almyra Avery⁵ Probart and had

John A.⁵ McFerrin who married Martha Douglass⁵ Abston and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J.² Livingston and had

a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.

b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.

c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

DOUGLASS FAMILY

Colonial and Revolutionary Lineages of America, Vol. 4, page 183: DOUGLASS, Scotch name for “Dweller by the black water,” is the most famous name produced by Scotland. The Douglass families of Virginia were very probably descended from the Douglass Clan of Scotland.

“Our Kin” by Ackerly and Parker, page 78: The Virginia Douglasses are descended from the Scottish family of Douglas—described by historians as the most powerful and widely celebrated family that Scotland ever produced. The records of the family go back to 1175. The Douglas held the title of Lords of Douglas. The family rose to power under King Robert Bruce of whom “the good Lord James

of Douglas" was the most distinguished adherent. The House of Douglas has always continued to be one of the most important in Scotland.

There are records of Douglass families in Virginia as early as 1625 and thereafter until recent times. They seemed to spread over nearly all of the State of Virginia. There are many entries about a James Douglass in Washington County in Southwest Virginia in the late Eighteenth Century. This narrative is principally concerned with the Douglass family of Sumner County, Tennessee. I have found no record of the date of the migration of any Douglass to Tennessee. However, there was a large migration of the Scotch-Irish from Pennsylvania and Southwest Virginia in the latter part of the Eighteenth Century and, doubtless, the Douglass family of Sumner County were among those who went to Tennessee at about that time. It is possible that the Edward Douglass who went to Sumner County was a son of the James Douglass above mentioned, but I find nothing to substantiate this surmise.

From "Historic Sumner County, Tennessee" by J. G. Cisco, the following is taken: The Douglass Family has been prominent in Sumner County since Edward Douglass, with all his children, settled on Station Camp Creek, a few miles north of Gallatin, 1785. He was born in Fauquier County, Virginia. (There were Douglasses in Fauquier County, and among them was a James Douglass.)

From "Landmarks of Old Prince William County" by Fairfax Harrison, it seems that the father of Colonel Edward Douglass, who moved to Tennessee was James Douglass, who was no less distinguished in the early history of Dumfries (near the present location of Quantico) than Colonel Douglass was in early Tennessee history and "that part of Fauquier County in which Dumfries is located was originally Prince William County, and Dumfries was quite a settlement of Scotch people."

"Historic Sumner County": Edward Douglass married about 1740 Sarah George. He was a commissioned officer in the War of Independence, a man of education, and a lawyer, although he never practiced law. He, when called

upon, gave legal advice to friends and neighbors without fee or reward, always counseling them not to go into the courts. He was one of the first magistrates in Sumner County and active in all public affairs. His home was near Salem Camp Grounds, on land in possession of his descendants in 1909.

Edward Douglass and Sarah George had seven sons and two daughters. The fourth son, Ezekiel, married Mary Gibson, and they had four sons and two daughters. The second son, James, married Rina Hunt and had five sons and four daughters. The second daughter, Mary Ann (born June 30, 1810, died May 10, 1899), married Merry C. Abston (born circa 1796 in Bedford County, Virginia, died November 26, 1860) on April 5, 1832. See Abston Family.

Ramsey's Annals of Tennessee, page 651: "... W. Douglass and Edward Douglass . . . represented Sumner County in the Convention of 1796."

Line of Descent:

James¹ Douglass had

Edward² Douglass who married Sarah George and had
Ezekiel³ Douglass who married Mary Gibson and had

James⁴ Douglass who married Rina Hunt and had

Mary Ann⁵ Douglass who married Merry C.⁴ Abston and
had

Martha Douglass⁵ Abston who married John A.⁵ McFerrin and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope
and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J.² Livingston and had

a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.

b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.

c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

LAUGHLIN FAMILY

"The McFerrins of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Tennessee" says: John Laughlin, the father of James, was born and reared near Belfast, Ireland, and there married Jane Matthews. James Laughlin, their son, was born in Ireland

and came with his parents to Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, about 1753. James married a Miss Duncan, and it was their daughter, Jane Laughlin, who married William² McFerrin in 1780. The Duncan Family were reputed to be remotely connected with the once royal family of Scotland.

“John B. McFerrin—A Biography” by Fitzgerald says that the Laughlins and the Duncans became numerous families and intermarried with the Berrys and many others. The Laughlins were noted for their muscular strength and courage.

The Laughlins evidently remained but a short time in Pennsylvania and then moved on to Augusta County, Virginia, as James is mentioned in Chalkley’s Records of that county, Vol. 1, pages 138, 455 and 461 in August, 1767, May, 1768, and November, 1768, respectively.

“Southwestern Virginia” by Fred Bittle Kegley:

Page 314: Under “New Life on the Roanoke,” James Laughlin acquires 36 acres and 54 acres on Carvin’s Creek, 10 February, 1768.

Page 542: James Laughlin, Grant of 136 and 34 acres on Carvin’s Creek, 1771.

Page 532: James Laughlin, Grant of 54 and 84 acres on Carvin’s Creek, 1771.

Page 542: James Laughlin and Jane, deed, 136 acres on Carvin’s Creek, 1772. (From this it is evident that the “Miss Duncan” who married James Laughlin was named Jane, and it was their daughter Jane—probably named for her mother—who married William² McFerrin in 1780.)

“Annals of Southwest Virginia” by Summers has the following:

Page 952: Ordered that James Laughlin be constable from Glades Hollow as high as the upper settlement in Elk Garden, Washington County, January 29, 1770.

Page 549: James Laughlin and Jane, his wife, October 14, 1772, grantors of 136 acres on Carvin’s Creek, a branch of the Roanoke.

Page 209: John Laughlin on jury duty, Botetourt County, Virginia, 17 September, 1773.

Page 990: Ordered that Richard Price be constable in the room of James Laughlin, Washington County, 19 May, 1778.

Page 1041: James Laughlin is privileged to build a mill on Spring Creek "on his own land," Washington County, 17 August, 1779.

Page 1073: James Laughlin appointed guardian of estate of Capt. John Dunkin, "Prisoners with the Enemy in Canady," Washington County, 20 March, 1781.

From the above it seems that the Laughlins, like the McFerrins and the Berrys, moved southward from Augusta County to Washington County. It is not known whether the John Laughlin who was on jury duty in Botetourt County was the father or the brother of James but probably the brother, as he appears in Washington County in August, 1778, as giving bond as the executor of an estate (page 997).

Jane Laughlin, daughter of James and (Jane?) Laughlin, was born circa 1760, and married William² McFerrin in 1780—see McFerrin Family.

Line of Descent:

John¹ Laughlin married Jane Matthews and had
James² Laughlin who married Jane Duncan and had
Jane³ Laughlin who married William² McFerrin and had
James³ McFerrin who married Jane Campbell³ Berry
and had

John Berry (I)⁴ McFerrin who married Almyra Avery⁵
Probart and had

John A.⁵ McFerrin who married Martha Douglass⁵ Ab-
ston and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope
and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J.² Living-
ston and had

- a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.
- b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.
- c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

PROBART FAMILY

The first Probart of whom I have found record is Sir Henry Probart, who married one of the Yelverton Peyton Family in England.

Burke's Baronetcy gives an account of Sir Henry and says the Probarts were a very old family and came to England with Henry VII. An account of the Probart Family may be found in "Dennis' Visitation of Wales." The Peyton genealogical record is considered very wonderful and goes back without a break to Henry I.

Capt. William Yelverton Probart of the British Navy was the son of Sir Henry Probart and the nephew and heir of Sir William Peyton of England. Captain Probart was, for a long time, on the Virginia station. He married a Miss Lane of Snow Hill, Maryland, and was disinherited by Sir William Peyton for marrying an American.

16V63: Elizabeth Gronous, Spinster, Middlesex County, England, left to William Probart of "Potome River, Worcester County, in Virginia," £300. She also left to "my Cousin," Sir Charles Peyton, £100; to "my cousin," Mary Peyton, £3,000; to "my Cousin," Elizabeth Peyton, £100. Date of Will, August 14, 1749, probated 6 June, 1750.

Same, page 64, Footnote: The testator was probably of a Welsh family. A Thomas Gronows, of London, Esq., was Sheriff of Radnorshire in 1733. Sir Charles Peyton, who is referred to in the will, succeeded to the Baronetcy (held under a mistaken claim) on the death, in 1748, of his uncle, Sir Yelverton Peyton, a naval officer, who was long in service on the Virginia station. Sir Charles died in 1760. He was a son of Bladwell Peyton, who married Mary, daughter of William Probart, Esq., of Cont Evengewenge, Radnorshire. Bladwell Peyton was a son of Charles Peyton, a younger brother of Major Robert Peyton of Virginia. When the elder line failed, the baronetcy was assumed in the belief that Robert Peyton had left no issue by the descendants of this younger brother, Charles. There is, of course, no County of Worcester in Virginia, and the Maryland county of the same name is not on the Potomac, so it

is uncertain whether the testator was mistaken in writing "Potomac," or intended to say Westmoreland County, Virginia.

The Probart Family seems to have been of some consequence. Among the sheriffs of Radnorshire were William Probart of Llanddwei, 1675: Henry Probart, Esq., of Llowes, 1680, and William Probart, Esq., of Llanddwei, 1691. Marshall states that there is a pedigree of Probart in Dwnn's Visitations of Wales, I, 267.

Capt. William Yelverton Probart and his wife, Miss Lane, had two children: a. William Yelverton Probart—see later, and Leah Probart, who first married a Mr. Franks, who lived but a short time, and, in 1778, she married Colonel Waightstill Avery, near Newbern, North Carolina. Colonel Avery was very prominent in Colonial affairs in his province, was in the Revolutionary War and later fought a duel with Andrew Jackson, later President of the United States. See Avery Family.

William Yelverton Probart was a wealthy merchant of Snow Hill, Maryland, who died while on a visit to London. His wife's name is not known. They had two sons: a. William Yelverton—see later; b. James, who lived in Baltimore, Maryland.

William Yelverton Probart, son of the above, was according to "John B. McFerrin—A Biography," by Fitzgerald, a North Carolinian and a nephew of Colonel Avery and an orphan when young. He wandered off to Tennessee, and was long a citizen of Nashville, where he was engaged in the clothing business. Here he married Sarah Johnson, daughter of Oliver Johnson, long known in Nashville as a worthy citizen.

It is evident that William Yelverton Probart was orphaned, when young, in Maryland, and went to North Carolina to be with his aunt, Leah, who married Colonel Avery. From there he emigrated to Nashville, Tennessee, where, on June 4, 1808, he married Sarah Johnson (born January 17, 1791, died February 16, 1857), daughter of Oliver and Hannah Johnson. They had one child, a daughter, Almyra

Avery, who married John B. McFerrin on September 18, 1833—see McFerrin Family.

Line of Descent:

Sir Henry¹ Probart married Miss Peyton and had

Capt. William Yelverton² Probart who married Miss Lane and had

William Yelverton³ Probart who married and had

William Yelverton⁴ Probart who married Sarah² Johnson and had

Almyra Avery⁵ Probart who married John Berry (I)⁴ McFerrin and had

John A.⁵ McFerrin who married Martha Douglass⁵ Ashton and had

Virginia⁶ McFerrin who married William Rivers⁹ Pope and had

Virginia McFerrin⁷ Pope who married Leon J.² Livingston and had.

a. Katherine Pope⁸ Livingston.

b. William Pope⁸ Livingston.

c. Richard McFerrin⁸ Livingston.

INDEX

Many names which are mentioned once only in the text and others which have little significance to this History are not indexed, nor are the names in the Magna Charta section indexed.

- Abston, Family, 197.
Francis, 197.
Jesse, 197.
John, 197, 198, 199.
Joshua, 197, 198.
Martha Douglass, 196.
Mary Ann, 196, 198.
Merry Carter, 196, 198, 199, 201.
- Acuff, Annie Hall, 196.
Clyde Weldon, 196.
Martha Kittrell, 196.
- Alexander, J. W., 18.
- Alfred the Great, 84, 104.
- Alston, Charity, 84.
Family, 84.
John, 15, 84, 86, 87, 100, 101, 142, 156, 157, 172.
Mary Clark, 84.
Philip, 86.
Sarah, 84, 86, 101, 142.
- Amherst, General Jeffrey, 203.
- Anderson, Family, 194.
Judge James, 194.
- Avery, Col. Waightstill, 199, 200, 213.
- Bentley, Alice Louise, 22.
Barbara, 22.
Josephine Craig, 22.
Max, 22.
- Berry, Elizabeth, 201, 204.
Family, 200.
Iron Works, 204.
Jane, 202.
Jane Campbell, 192, 193, 202, 204.
James, 201, 203, 204.
John, 200, 202, 203, 204, 207.
- John, Jr., 201.
- Boddie, Elizabeth, 15, 36.
John, 15, 16, 36, 37, 118, 119, 172.
- Brown, Aaron, Sr., 87, 88, 89, 159, 160.
Aaron V., 88.
Ann, 90.
Ann Lovett, 87.
Cassandra Howell, 87.
Elizabeth, 88, 89.
Family, 87.
General John C., 83.
Lewis, 87, 88.
Lewis, Jr., 87, 88.
Martha Richardson, 87.
William, 90.
- Brownson, Dr. E. R., 92, 94.
- Brunson, Abraham, 92, 93.
Charles, 96.
Family, 90.
George, 90.
Hannah Scott, 92, 93.
Isaac, Sr., 90, 91, 93, 94, 95.
Isaac, Jr., 91, 94, 95.
John, 90, 92, 93.
John, Jr., 90, 93.
Margaret, 65, 68, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 105.
Matthew, 90, 96.
Richard, 90, 92.
Richard, Jr., 90, 92.
William, Sr., 65, 90, 91, 94, 96, 97, 105.
William, Jr., 96.
- Bryan, Claiborne N., 195.
Louise, 195.
William Robert, 195.

216 *Histories of Pope, Carter and McFerrin Families*

- Campbell, Alexander, 204, 206, 207.
 Arthur, 205, 206.
 Charles, 205, 206.
 David, 205, 206.
 Elizabeth, 206.
 Family, 205.
 Gen. William, 205, 206, 207.
 Campbell, Jane, 204, 206.
 Patrick, 205, 206.
 Robert, 205, 206.
 Sarah, 206.
 Cartall, Louis M., 26.
 Louis M., Jr., 26.
 Mary Lesey, 26.
 Virginia, 26.
 Carter, Anderson, 71.
 Arabella Williamson, 63.
 Benjamin (I), 18, 19, 65, 66, 67, 69, 71, 80, 82.
 Benjamin (II), Dr., 66, 68, 71, 73, 76, 101, 149, 153, 167.
 Benjamin (III), 78, 79, 84.
 Benjamin Franklin, 23, 71, 74, 77, 78, 82, 83, 102, 167.
 Cynthia Rivers (I), 23, 77, 78, 80, 84.
 Cynthia Rivers (II), 78, 79.
 Daniel (I), 63, 64, 158.
 Daniel (II), 18, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 71, 76, 104, 105.
 Elizabeth Lindsay, 78, 79.
 Elizabeth Pannil, 64.
 John, 65, 66, 69, 81.
 John Rivers, 78, 83.
 Katherine Dale, 61, 62, 63.
 Mary Margaret, 78, 79.
 Milton, 20, 69, 75.
 Myra Belle (I), 21, 23, 24, 78, 167.
 Myra Belle (II), 26, 78.
 Myra Belle (III), 24.
 Name and Family of, 58.
 Robert, 64, 65, 66, 68, 69, 105.
 Sarah Elizabeth, 74, 76, 167.
 Capt. Thomas, Sr., 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 114, 170.
 Capt. Thomas, Jr., 61, 62, 63.
 William, 59, 69.
 Cary, Elizabeth, 18.
 Family, 18.
 Charlemagne, Emperor, 104.
 Claiborne, Elizabeth Buller, 98, 99.
 Family, 97.
 Jane Butler, 98.
 Lineage, 97.
 Mary, 98, 99, 126.
 William, 97, 98, 99, 100, 126.
 Clark, Family, 100.
 John, 85, 86, 100, 101, 156, 157.
 Mary, 85, 100, 101, 156, 157.
 Mary (II), 101, 156.
 Coleman, Ann Spilsby, 102.
 Elizabeth Wyatt, 102.
 Family, 102.
 Mary, 102.
 Samuel, 102.
 Spilsby, 102, 116.
 Robert, 102.
 Robert (II), 102.
 Conyers, Captain, 106, 107.
 Daniel, 69, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109.
 Elizabeth, 104, 106.
 Family, 103.
 James, 68, 69, 104, 106.
 James, Major, 69, 104, 105, 107, 109.
 John, 103, 104, 106, 107, 108, 109, 111.
 Jo:, 103.
 Sir John, 103.
 Margaret, 103.
 Mary, 104, 110.
 Mary McIntosh, 104, 109.
 Mary Quarterman, 104, 109.
 Mary Witherspoon, 105.
 Richard, 104, 106.

- Sarah, 65, 67, 68, 69, 76, 104, 105, 109, 111.
Straughan (Stran), 69, 104, 107, 109.
W., 68.
William, 104, 106, 109.
Cooke, Family, 193.
Crawford, David (I), 112, 113, 165.
David (II), 113.
Elizabeth Smith, 113.
Family, 111.
"Good Old Captain," 113.
John, 112, 113.
Mary, 113.
Crawley, Mourning, 40.
Cromwell, 155.
Crutcher, T. Wilburn, 195.
Cullom, Alla Roddy, 196.
Martha Winfield, 196.
Webster Burr, 196.
Cunningham, James, Sr., 196.
James, Jr., 196.
Mary McFerrin, 196.
Dale, Diana Skipwith, 63, 114, 115.
Edward, 62, 63, 114, 115, 170.
Family, 114.
Katherine, 61, 62, 63, 170.
Daniel, Elizabeth Coleman, 116, 117.
Family, 116.
Sarah, 116, 117, 152.
William, 116.
William, Jr., 102, 116, 152.
Dawson, Charity Alston, 86, 120, 121, 172.
Elizabeth, 36, 118, 119, 146.
Family, 117.
Henry, 117, 118, 119.
John (I), 117, 118.
John (II), 36, 37, 85, 119, 120, 144, 146, 172.
Mary, 120, 121.
D'Arcys, 104.
Douglass, Edward, 208, 209.
Ezekial, 209.
Family, 207.
James, 208, 209.
Martha, 199.
Mary Ann, 196, 198, 199, 209.
Mary Gibson, 209.
Rina Hunt, 209.
Sarah George, 208, 209.
Dowell, Louise Rivers, 83.
John Thatcher, 84.
Julian Cone, 84.
Mary Elizabeth, 83.
Osgood, 83.
Richard Carter, 84.
Duncan, Miss 191, 219.
Elizabeth, Queen, 7.
English, Alice Watts, 12, 29, 30, 55.
Family, 29.
Capt. John, 12, 29, 30, 55.
Epperson, Ben C., 77.
Elizabeth Lindsay, 77.
Children, 77.
Cornelia C., 76.
Dr. Jacob, 76.
Exum, Ann, 31, 32, 33, 34, 38, 44.
Family, 14, 30.
Jane, 31, 32, 33.
Jeremiah, 14, 31, 32, 33, 34, 38, 40, 47, 53, 172.
Mary, 14, 32, 33, 44, 52, 53.
Mourning, 33.
Richard, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34.
Thomas, 31.
William, 31, 32, 33.
Ferguson, Major, British Army, 122.
Gant, Ann, 35.
Edward, 35.
Elizabeth, 35.
Family, 34.
John, 34, 35.

- Leah Norwood, 21, 35, 51.
 Lesey Jane, 20, 21, 35, 51, 52.
 William, 21, 34, 35, 51.
 William, Jr., 34, 35.
- Gilbert, Family, 122.
 Narrative, 123.
 Sarah, 122, 123, 124, 133.
 William, 122, 123, 125, 133.
- de Greys, 104.
- Granville, Earl of, 16, 42.
- Hadley, Elise, 21.
 Etta, 21.
 Sarah, 21.
- Hampton, Gen. Wade, 67, 107.
- Harderick, First Saxon King, 84.
- Harris, Adria Obsorne, 126.
 Family, 125.
 Mary Claiborne, 126, 127, 129.
 Mourning Glenn, 128, 129.
 Robert (I), 99, 126, 128, 166.
 Robert (II), 99, 127, 128, 129.
 Sarah, 129, 166.
 Temperance Overton, 99, 127, 167.
 Capt. Thomas, 125, 126, 129.
 William, 99, 126, 127, 128, 154.
- Harrison, Benjamin, 130.
 Benjamin,⁴ 130.
 Benjamin,⁵ 130.
 Family, 130.
 Henry, 131.
 Mary, 131.
 May, 131.
- Hawkins, Sada, 24, 78.
- Henry, Patrick, 136.
- Holland, Cemetery, 134, 139.
 Cynthia, 135, 167.
 Descendants of, 139.
 Family, 131.
 James, 122, 123, 124, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 136, 137, 139, 140, 166.
 James' widow, 135.
 Mary Harrison, 130.
- May Harrison, 130.
 Narrative, 131, 135.
 Sarah Gilbert, 132, 139.
 William, 130, 131, 132.
 William Blount, 134.
- Jackson, Gen. Andrew, 73, 192, 213.
- Jeffries, Elizabeth (I), 15, 16, 36, 37.
 Elizabeth (II), 15, 16, 36, 37, 119, 172.
 Family, 36.
 Osborn, 15, 36, 37.
 Simon, 15, 36, 38.
- Johnson, Hannah, 213.
 Oliver, 213.
 Sarah, 213.
- Kearney, Barnaby (I), 144, 145.
 Barnaby (II), 144.
 Edmond (I), 142.
 Edmond (II), 142, 145.
 Family, 142.
 Michael, 142, 145.
 Philip, 85, 101, 144, 145, 148, 149, 150.
 Sarah Alston, 86, 142.
 Sarah, 101, 144.
 Lord Thomas, 13, 85, 86, 101, 142, 144, 145.
- Kinchen, Elizabeth, 101, 142, 145, 146, 148, 149, 150.
 Elizabeth Ruffin, 146, 147.
 Family, 145.
 John, 147, 148, 149, 150.
 Matthew, 146, 147, 149, 150.
 Mary, 147, 150.
 Mary Dawson, 142.
 Martha, 147, 148.
 Sarah, 147, 149.
 Thomas, 146.
 William (I), 142, 145, 146, 147, 168.
 William (II), 121, 146, 147, 148, 149, 172.
 William (III), 147, 148, 150.

- Kings of France, 104.
Ku Klux Klan, 74.
Lane, Barnaby, 48.
 Joseph, 47, 48.
 Miss, 212, 213.
Laughlin, Family, 209.
 Jane, 191, 210, 211.
 Jane Matthews, 209.
 James, 191, 209, 211.
 John, 209.
Lawrence, Ann, 14, 34, 40.
 Elizabeth, 39.
 Family, 14, 38.
 Jane, 34, 40.
 John, 31, 32, 38, 39, 40.
 Sir John, 38.
 Mary, 39, 40.
 Robert, Sr., 34, 38, 39.
 Robert, Jr., 34, 39, 40.
 Thomas, 38.
Lenoir, Family, 40.
 Leah, 40, 51.
 Thomas, 40.
 Gen. William, 40.
Lindsay, Adam, 151, 152.
 Caleb, 151, 152, 153.
 David, 150, 151, 153, 154.
 Elizabeth Kinchen, 74, 101, 149, 153.
 Family, 150.
 James, 117, 151, 152, 153, 154.
 Sir Jerome, 150, 151, 153.
 Rev. John, 101, 144, 149, 153.
 Mary Masterson, 152.
 Robert, 151, 153, 154.
 Sarah Daniel, 152, 153.
Livingston, Jacob, 27.
 Leon J., 27.
 Katherine Pope, 27.
 Katherine Price, 27.
 Richard McFerrin, 27.
 William Pope, 27.
 Virginia Pope, 27.
Lucas, Ann, 18, 41, 42.
 Family, 41.
 James, 43.
 John, 41, 42.
 William, 18, 41, 42, 43.
Magna Charta Barons, 107, 108.
Marbury, Ellen, 81.
 Capt. William, 81.
Marion, Gen. Francis, 70, 107.
Masterson, Edward, 152.
 Sir Thomas, 152.
Matthews, Jane, 209.
Maxwell, Richard, 22.
 Virginia, 22.
McFerrin, Almyra Anderson, 78, 196.
 Almyra Avery, 194, 195, 213.
 Almyra Probart, 195.
 Rev. Anderson Purdy, 193.
 Brothers, 184.
 Elizabeth, 187, 196.
 Elizabeth Johnson, 195.
 Elizabeth McGavock, 195.
 Family, 184.
 George Pierce, 196.
 Helen Carter, 197.
 Jane, 187.
 Jane Campbell Berry, 192, 193, 204.
 Jane Laughlin, 192.
 James, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 192, 193, 204.
 James Abston, 196.
 James H., 192, 193.
 James William, 194.
 John, 184, 186, 187, 189.
 John, Jr., 185, 188.
 John Anderson, 26, 194, 195, 199.
 John Berry (I), 193, 194, 195, 204.
 John Berry (II), 196.
 John Carter, 197.
 Katherine Louise, 195.
 Martha Abston, 196.
 Martha Ann, 196.
 Martin, 184, 186, 187, 189.

220 *Histories of Pope, Carter and McFerrin Families*

- Mary, 187.
 Mary Douglass, 196.
 Merry ~~Mary~~ Carter, 197.
 Samuel, 184, 186, 187, 189.
 Sarah Jane, 194.
 Thomas, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188.
 Virginia, 78, 196, 197.
 Virginia Douglass, 196.
 William,¹ 184, 185, 187, 189, 190.
 William,² 190, 191, 192, 193, 210.
 McGavock, Cynthia T., 195.
 McIntosh, John, 110.
 Mary, 68, 104, 110.
 William, 110.
 McKinne, Barnaby, 13, 14, 32, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 52, 53, 146.
 Barnaby, Jr., 45.
 Elizabeth, 44.
 Family, 44.
 Mary Exum, 45, 46.
 Michael, 31, 44, 47, 171.
 Mourning, 13, 14, 45, 46, 48.
 Patience, 45, 47, 48.
 Sarah, 171.
 McKissack, Lena, 23.
 John W., 22.
 Mary Robina, 22.
 Orville Pope, 22.
 McLemore, Atkins Pope, 22.
 Florille, 22.
 Frances, 22.
 Janie, 22.
 John D., 22.
 Lesey Ann, 22.
 Lesey Virginia, 22.
 Robina, 22.
 Sidney Gant, 22.
 Mills, Elizabeth, 64.
 Frances, 64.
 William, 64, 157.
 Newkirk, Nancy Belle, 84.
 Eugene, 84.
 Nevilles, 104.
 Nicholson, George, 17.
 Jane, 17.
 O. A. P., 17.
 Norwood, Family, 49.
 George, 50.
 John (I), 49.
 John (II), 50.
 John Wall, Sr., 40, 51, 52.
 John Wall, Jr., 56.
 Leah, 35, 51.
 Lydia Jordan, 50.
 Mary Wall, 51.
 Thomas (I), 50, 51.
 Thomas (II), 50.
 Wiggin de, 49.
 William (I), 50, 54.
 William (II), 50.
 Osborne, Adria, 126.
 Thomas, 126.
 Overton, Elizabeth, 155.
 Family, 154.
 John, 154.
 Mary Waters, 128, 154, 155.
 Col. Robert, 154.
 Temperance, 127, 154, 155.
 William (I), 128, 154, 155.
 William (II), 127, 128.
 Palin, Ann, 156.
 Family, 156.
 Henry, 156.
 Henry, Jr., 156.
 John, 100, 156, 157.
 Mary, 85, 100, 156.
 Sarah, 100, 156.
 Pannil, Elizabeth, 64, 157, 158.
 Family, 157.
 Frances, 64, 157, 158.
 William (I), 64, 157, 158.
 William (II), 158.
 Parham, J. T., 119.
 Percy, Josiah L., 77.
 Children, 77.
 Peyton, Bladwell, 212.

- Charles, 212.
Sir Charles, 212.
Elizabeth, 212.
Family, 212.
Mary, 212.
Robert, 212.
Sir William, 212.
Sir Yelverton, 212.
Polk, James K., 71, 194.
Pope, Ann, 10, 19.
 Ann Lucas, 18, 20.
 Benjamin Carter, 24.
 Chapel, 19.
 Cary W., 18.
 Elizabeth, 18.
 Ethel, 24.
 Etta, 21.
 Family, 6, 28.
 Frank Carter, 24, 78.
 George, 8, 9, 17.
 Gustavus A. (I), 20.
 Gustavus A. (II), 21, 23, 24, 78.
 Gustavus A. (III), 24, 78.
 Gustavus A. (IV), 24, 82.
 Henry, 11, 12, 13, 30, 55.
 Jane (I), 17.
 Jane (II), 11.
 Jane Osborn, 19.
 James Rouse, 22.
 JO: (John?), 8.
 John (I), 12, 13, 14, 15, 45, 46, 48.
 John (II), 15, 16, 17, 37, 119.
 John (III), 13, 37.
 John (IV), 15, 16, 17.
 John (V), 15, 17, 18, 19.
 John O., 18.
 John W., 18.
 Julia, 26, 78.
 Leseý Ann, 22.
 Leseý Jane, 21.
 Lemuel, 18.
 Mary Crafford, 19.
 Mary Haile, 11, 53.
 Marie, 10.
 Mary Leseý, 26, 78.
 Mary Rivers, 24.
 Mary Robina, 22.
 Mourning McKinne, 13, 14, 45, 46, 47, 48.
 Myra Belle (I), 23, 24, 78.
 Myra Belle (II), 26, 78.
 Myra Belle (III), 24, 78.
 Name and Family of, 6.
 Nathaniel, 8, 9, 10.
 Osborn, 16, 17.
 Penellopee, 17.
 Richard, 10.
 Richard W., 18.
 Sarah, 11, 12, 13.
 Sarah Watts, 11.
 Temperence, 17.
 Thomas, 6, 10.
 Thomas Anderson, 18.
 Thomas A. L., 18.
 Sir Thomas, 7.
 Winifred, 15, 48.
 Sir William, 6.
 William (I), 9, 10, 11, 53.
 William (II), 11.
 William Campbell, 18.
 William Leonidas, 21, 23.
 William Rivers, 24, 26, 78.
 William Rouse, 17, 19, 20, 21, 35, 52.
 Willie, 21.
 Various, 27-29.
 Virginia McFerrin (I), 26.
 Virginia McFerrin (II), 26.
Probart, Almyra Avery, 194, 213.
 Family, 212, 213.
 Sir Henry, 212.
 Henry, 213.
 James, 213.
 Leah, 213.
 William, 212, 213.
 William Yelverton, 212, 213.
Ricks, Family, 52.
 Isaac, Sr., 33, 52, 53.
 Jacob, 32, 33, 45, 52, 53.
Rivers, Cynthia, 78, 84.
 Cynthia Holland, 76, 162.

222 *Histories of Pope, Carter and McFerrin Families*

- Elizabeth, 89, 160.
 Family, 158.
 Flournoy, 161.
 George, 159.
 James W., 89.
 Jane Harrison, 160, 161.
 John, 159, 160.
 John Harper, 76, 89, 159, 160, 162, 167.
 Julia Flournoy, 161.
 Mary Elizabeth, 76, 162.
 Mary Jones, 159.
 Richard, 158, 159.
 Robert, 159, 160, 161.
 Sarah Myra, 80, 162.
 Thomas, 159, 160.
 Thomas' children, 159.
 Tyree Rodes, 161.
 William, 88, 89, 159, 160.
 William Cannon, 161.
 William H., 76, 161.
 William H.'s children, 161.
 William Wilkins, 89, 159, 160.
 Rodes, Charles (XII), 164, 165, 166.
 Clifton, 164, 165, 166.
 Cynthia, 76, 135.
 Cynthia Holland, 166, 167.
 David, 166.
 Family, 163.
 Family Bible, 99, 129, 165, 167.
 John, 113, 128, 129, 163, 164, 165, 166.
 Lineage, 163.
 Mary Crawford, 113, 165, 166.
 Sarah Myra, 76, 162.
 Sarah, 129, 166.
 Robert, 76, 164, 167.
 Robert's children, 76.
 Tyree, 76, 129, 135, 139, 166, 167.
 Tyree's children, 76.
 Ruffin, Elizabeth (I), 146, 168.
 Elizabeth (II), 168.
 Elizabeth (III), 168.
 Elizabeth (IV), 168.
 Family, 168.
 Robert (I), 146, 168.
 Robert (II), 168.
 Robert (III), 168.
 William (I), 168.
 William (II), 168.
 Russell, John Caro, 22.
 John Caro, Jr., 22.
 Skipwith, Diana, 61, 114, 170.
 Family, 169.
 Sir Grey, 114, 170.
 Sir Henry, 61, 114.
 Lineage, 114.
 Sons of the Cincinnati, 81, 83.
 Sowell, Rev. Peyton, 195.
 Tennessee McFerrin, 195.
 Stowe, John Ashley, 196.
 Rev. J. J., 196.
 J. J., Jr., 196.
 Martha, 196.
 Myra India, 196.
 William McFerrin, 196.
 Sumter, General, 67.
 Thatcher, Elizabeth Lindsay, 79.
 Lewis, 79.
 Louise Rivers, 79, 83.
 Miss Mollie, 79.
 Nancy Belle, 79, 83.
 Thomas, Barnaby, 37, 120.
 Dorothy (I), 171, 172.
 Dorothy (II), 171, 172.
 Elizabeth (I), 37, 171, 172.
 Elizabeth (II), 172.
 Family, 170.
 John (I), 171, 172.
 John (II), 171, 172.
 John's children, 171.
 John (III), 172.
 Mary, 120.
 Richard, 171, 172.
 William, 171.
 Thompson, Myra, 22.
 Trotter, Col. Joseph, 80.
 Silas, 80.
 Wall, Elizabeth, 54.

Histories of Pope, Carter and McFerrin Families 223

- | | |
|---------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Family, 54. | Henry, 55. |
| John, 30, 54. | John, 30. |
| Joseph, 54. | Sarah, 12, 30, 55. |
| Mary, 50, 54. | Wheeler, Gen. Joseph, 23. |
| Washington, Augustine, 8. | Whitaker, Ann, 17. |
| Family, 7. | Mr., 40. |
| George, 8, 166. | Richard, 18. |
| John, 8, 51. | William the Conqueror, 104, 169. |
| Lawrence, 7, 8. | Williamson, Almyra, 195. |
| Watkins, Robert H., 77. | Arabella, 63. |
| Children, 77. | Charles, 195. |
| Watts, Alice, 12, 29, 55. | Yarbrough, James Henry, 195. |
| Family, 55. | Margaret McGavock, 195. |

